



W. Delle

J. J. J. J.

Ioannis Miltoni Effigies
Ætat. 63. 1671.



W. Delle

J. J. J. J.

Ioannis Miltoni Effigies
Ætat. 63. 1671.

Paradise Lost.
A
P O E M
I N
T W E L V E B O O K S.

The Author
J O H N M I L T O N.

The Third Edition.
Revised and Augmented by the
same Author.

L O N D O N,
Printed by *S. Simmons* next door to the
Golden Lion in *Aldersgate-street*, 1678.

Paradise Lost.

A

POEM

IN

TWELVE BOOKS.

The Author

JOHN MILTON.

The Third Edition.

Revised and Augmented by the

same Author.

LONDON,

Printed by A. Stevenson next door to the
Golden Lion in Aldersgate Street, 1678.

Paradisum Amissam

Summi Poetae

JOHANNIS MILTONI.

Qui legis Amissam Paradisum, grandis a magni
Carmina Miltoni, quid nisi cuncta legis?
Res cunctas, & cunctarum primordia rerum,
Et facta, & fines continet iste liber.
Intima panduntur magni penetralia mundi,
Scribitur & tota quicquid in Orbe latet.
Terraque, tractusque maris, calumque profundum
Sulphurenmque Erebi, flammivomumque specus,
Quaque Colunt terras, Portumque & Tartara caca,
Quaque colunt summi lucida regna Poli:
Et quodcunque ullis conclusum est finibus usquam,
Et sine fine Chaos, & sine fine Deus:
Et sine fine magis, si quid magis est sine fine,
In Christo erga homines conciliatus amor.
Hæc qui speraret quis crederet esse futurum?
Et tamen hæc hodie terra Britannia legit.
O quantos in bella Duces! qua protulit arma!
Quæ canit, & quanta prælia dira tuba.
Cælestes acies! atque in certamine Cælum!
Et quæ Cælestes pugna deceret agros!
Quantus in aetheriis tollit se Lucifer armis!
Atque ipso graditur vix Michael minor!
Quantis, & quam funestis concurritur iris
Dum ferus hic stellas protegit, ille rapit!
Dum vulsos Montes ceu Tela reciproca torquent,
Et non mortali de super igne pluvius:

Paradise Lost.

When I beheld the Poet blind, yet bold,
 In slender Book his vast Design unfold,
Messiah Crown'd, Gods Reconcil'd Decree,
 Rebelling Angels, the Forbidden Tree,
 Heav'n, Hell, Earth, Chaos, All ; the Argument
 Held me a while misdoubting his Intent,
 That he would ruine (for I saw him strong)
 The sacred Truths to Fable and old Song
 (So *Sampson* groap'd the Temples Posts in spight)
 The World o'rewhelming to revenge his fight.

Yet as I read, soon growing less severe,
 I lik'd his Project, the success did fear ;
 Through that wide Field how he his way should find
 O're which lame Faith leads Understanding blind ;
 Left he perplex'd the things he would explain,
 And what was easie he should render vain.

Or if a Work so infinite he spann'd,
 Jealous I was that some less skilful hand
 (Such as disquiet always what is well,
 And by ill imitating would excell)
 Might hence presume the whole Creations day
 To change in Scenes, and show it in a Play.

Pardon me, Mighty Poet, nor despise
 My causeless, yet not impious, surmise.
 But I am now convinc'd, and none will dare
 Within thy labours to pretend a share.
 Thou hast not miss'd one thought that could be fit,
 And all that was improper dost omit :

So that no room is here for Writers left,
But to detect their Ignorance or Theft.

That Majesty which through thy Work doth Reign
Draws the Devout, deterring the Profane,
And things divine thou treat'st of in such state
As them preserves, and thee, inviolate.

At once delight and horror on us seize,
Thou sing'st with so much gravity and ease;
And above humane flight dost soar aloft
With Plume so strong, so equal, and so soft.
The Bird nam'd from that Paradise you sing
So never flags, but always keeps on Wing.

Where could'st thou words of such a compass find?
Whence furnish such a vast expence of mind?
Just Heav'n thee like *Teresias* to requite
Rewards with Prophesie thy loss of light.

Well might'st thou scorn thy Readers to allure
With tinkling Rhime, of thy own sense secure;
While the *Town-Bayer*, writes all the while and spells,
And like a Pack-horse tires without his Bells.
Their Fancies like our Bushy-points appear,
The Poets rag them, we for fashion wear.
I too transported by the Mode offend,
And while I meant to Praise thee must Commend
Thy Verse created like thy Theme sublime,
In Number, Weight, and Measure, needs no Rhime.

(And by illimiting would excel)
Might hence proclaim the whole Creation day
To charm in songs, and show it in a Play.
Pardon me, Mighty Poet, not despite
My caustic, yet not malicious, turn.
But I am now convinc'd, and none will dare
Within thy bounds to pretend a share.
You shall not misdeem that thought that could be fit
And all that was in proper diction fit.

THE VERSE.

THE Measure is English Heroic Verse without Rhime, as that of Homer in Greek, and of Virgil in Latin; Rhime being no necessary Adjunct or true Ornament of Poem or good Verse, in longer Works especially, but the Invention of a barbarous Age, to set off wretched matter and lame Meeter; grac't indeed since by the use of some famous modern Poets, carried away by Custom, but much to thir own vexation, hindrance, and constraint to express many things otherwise, and for the most part worse then else they would have expressed them. Not without cause therefore some both Italian and Spanish Poets of prime note have rejected Rhime both in longer and shorter Works, as have also long since our best English Tragedies, as a thing of it self, to all judicious ears, triveal and of no true musical delight; which consists onely in apt Numbers, fit quantity of Syllables, and the sense variously drawn out from one Verse into another, not in the jingling sound of like endings, a fault avoyded by
the

the learned Ancients both in Poetry and all
 good Oratory. This neglect then of Rhime so
 little is to be taken for a defect, though it may
 seem so perhaps to vulgar Readers, that it ra-
 ther is to be esteem'd an example set, the first
 in English, of ancient liberty recover'd to He-
 roic Poem from the troublesome and modern
 bondage of Rhiming.

Paradise

Paradise Lost.

BOOK I.

THE ARGUMENT.

This First Book proposes, first in brief, the whole Subject, *Mans disobedience, and the loss thereupon of Paradise wherein he was plac'd*: Then touches the prime cause of his fall, the Serpent, or rather Satan in the Serpent; who revolting from God, and drawing to his side many Legions of Angels, was by the command of God driven out of Heaven with all his Crew into the great Deep. Which action past over, the Poem halts into the midst of things, presenting Satan with his Angels now fallen into Hell, describ'd here, not in the Center (for Heaven and Earth may be suppos'd as yet not made, certainly not yet accurst) but in a place of utter darkness, fitliest call'd Chaos: Here Satan with his Angels lying on the burning Lake, thunder-struck and astonish'd; after a certain space recovers, as from confusion; calls up him who next in Order and Dignity lay by him; they confer of their miserable fall. Satan awakens all his Legions, who

lay till then in the same manner confounded; They rise, thir Numbers, array of Battle, thir chief Leaders nam'd, according to the Idols known afterwards in Canaan and the Countries adjoyning. To these Satan directs his Speech, comforts them with hope yet of regaining Heaven, but tells them lastly of a new World and new kind of Creature to be created, according to an ancient Prophecie or report in Heaven; for that Angels were long before this visible Creation, was the opinion of many ancient Fathers. To find out the truth of this Prophecie, and what to determin thereon he refers to a full Councel. What his Associates thence attempt. Pandemonium the Palace of Satan rises, suddenly built out of the Deep: The infernal Peers there sit in Councel.



Q F Mans First Disobedience, and
the Fruit
Of that Forbidden Tree, whose
mortal tast
Brought Death into the World,
and all our woe,
With loss of Eden, till one
greater Man

Restore us, and regain the blissful Seat,
Sing Heav'nly Muse, that on the secret top
Of Oreb, or of Sinai, didst inspire
That Shepherd, who first taught the chosen Seed,
In the Beginning how the Heav'ns and Earth
Rose out of Chaos: Or if Sion Hill
Delight thee more, and Siloa's Brook that flow'd
Fast by the Oracle of God; I thence
Invoke thy aid to my adventrous Song,

That

BOOK I. *Paradise Lost,*

3

That with no middle flight intends to soar
Above th' *Aonian* Mount, while it pursues
Things unattempted yet in Prose or Rhime.
And chiefly Thou O Spirit, that dost prefer
Before all Temples th' upright heart and pure,
Instruct me, For Thou know'st; Thou from the first
Wast present, and with mighty Wings outspread
Dove-like satst brooding on the vast Abyss
And mad'st it pregnant: What in me is dark
Illumin, what is low raise and support;
That to the highth of this great Argument
I may assert Eternal Providence,
And justifie the wayes of God to men.

Say first, for Heav'n hides nothing from thy view
Nor the deep Tract of Hell, say first what cause
Mov'd our Grand Parents in that happy State,
Favour'd of Heav'n so highly, to fall off
From thir Creator, and transgress his Will
For one restraint, Lords of the World besides?
Who first seduc'd them to that foul revolt?
Th' infernal Serpent; he it was, whose guile
Stir'd up with Envy and Revenge, deceiv'd
The Mother of Mankind, what time his Pride
Had cast him out from Heav'n, with all his Host
Of Rebel Angels, by whose aid aspiring
To set himself in Glory above his Peers,
He trusted to have equal'd the Most High,
If he oppos'd; and with ambitious aim
Against the Throne and Monarchy of God
Rais'd impious War in Heav'n and Battel proud
With vain attempt. Him the Almighty Power
Hurl'd headlong flaming from th' Ethereal Skie
With hideous ruine and combustion down
To bottomless perdition, there to dwell

B 2

In

In Adamantine Chains and penal Fire,
Who durst despise th' Omnipotent to Arms.
Nine times the Space that measures Day and Night
To mortal men, he with his horrid crew
Lay vanquish'd, rowling in the fiery Gulf
Confounded though immortal: But his doom
Reserv'd him to more wrath; for now the thought
Both of lost happiness and lasting pain
Torments him; round he throws his baleful eyes
That witness'd huge affliction and dismay,
Mixt with obdurate pride and stedfast hate:
At once as far as Angels ken he views
The dismal Situation waste and wilde,
A Dungeon horrible, on all sides round
As one great Furnace flam'd, yet from those flames
No light, but rather darkness visible
Serv'd onely to discover sights of woe,
Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace
And rest can never dwell, hope never comes
That comes to all; but torture without end
Still urges, and a fiery Deluge, fed
With ever-burning Sulphur unconsum'd:
Such place Eternal Justice had prepar'd
For those rebellious, here thir Prison ordain'd
In utter darkness, and thir portion set
As far remov'd from God and light of Heav'n
As from the Center thrice to th' utmost Pole.
O how unlike the place from whence they fell!
There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelm'd
With Floods and Whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,
He soon discerns, and weltring by his side
One next himself in power, and next in crime,
Long after known in *Palestine*, and nam'd
Beelzebub. To whom th' Arch-Enemy,

And

BOOK I.

Paradise Lost.

5

And thence in Heav'n call'd Satan, with bold words
Breaking the horrid silence thus began.

If thou bee'st he; But O how fall'n! How chang'd
From him, who in the happy Realms of light
Cloth'd with transcendent brightness didst out-shine
Myriads though bright: If he whom mutual league,
United thoughts and counsels, equal hope
And hazard in the Glorious Enterprize,
Joynd with me once, now misery hath joynd
In equal ruin: into what Pit thou seest
From what highth fallen, so much the stronger prov'd
He with his Thunder: and till then who knew
The force of those dire Arms? Yea not for those,
Nor what the Potent Victor in his rage
Can else inflict, do I repent or change,
Though chang'd in outward lustre; that fixt mind
And high disdain, from sence of injur'd merit,
That with the Mightiest rais'd me to contend,
And to the fierce contention brought along
Innumerable force of Spirits arm'd
That durst dislike his Reign, and me preferring,
His utmost power with adverse power oppos'd
In dubious Battle on the Plains of Heav'n,
And shook his Throne. What though the field be lost?
All is not lost; the unconquerable Will,
And study of revenge, immortal hate,
And courage never to submit or yield:
And what is else not to be overcome?
That Glory never shall his wrath or might
Extort from me. To bow and sue for grace
With suppliant knee, and deifie his power,
Who from the terrour of this Arm so late
Doubted his Empire, that were low indeed,
That were an ignominy and shame beneath

This downfall; since by Fate the strength of Gods
 And this Empyrean substance cannot fail,
 Since through experience of this great event
 In Arms not worse, in foresight much advanc't,
 We may with more successful hope resolve
 To wage by force or guile Eternal Warr
 Irreconcilable, to our grand Foe,
 Who now Triumphs, and in th' excess of Joy
 Sole reigning holds the Tyranny of Heav'n.

So speak th' Apostate Angel, though in pain,
 Vaunting aloud, but rackt with deep despaire:
 And him thus answer'd soon his bold Compeer.

O Prince, O Chief of many Throned Powers,
 That led th' imbattelld Seraphim to Warr
 Under thy conduct, and in dreadful deeds
 Fearless, endanger'd Heav'n's perpetual King;
 And put to proof his high Supremacy,
 Whether upheld by strength, or Chance, or Fate,
 Too well I see and rue the dire event,
 That with sad overthrow and soul defeat
 Hath lost us Heav'n, and all this mighty Host
 In horrible destruction laid thus low,
 As far as Gods and Heavenly Essences
 Can perish: for the mind and spirit remains
 Invincible, and vigour soon returns,
 Though all our Glory extinct, and happy state
 Here swallow'd up in endless misery.
 But what if he our Conquerour, (whom I now
 Of force believe Almighty, since no less
 Then such could have orepow'rd such force as ours
 Have left us this our Spirit and strength intire
 Strongly to suffer and support our pains,
 That we may so suffice his vengeful ire,
 Or do him mightier service as his thralls

By right of Warr, what e're his business be
Here in the heart of Hell to work in Fire,
Or do his Errands in the gloomy Deep;
What can it then avail though yet we feel
Strength undiminisht, or eternal being
To undergo eternal punishment?
Whereto with speedy words th' Arch-fiend reply'd.

Fall'n Cherube, to be weak is miserable
Doing or Suffering: But of this be sure,
To do ought good never will be our task,
But ever to do ill our sole delight,
As being the contrary to his high will
Whom we resist. If then his Providence
Out of our evil seek to bring forth good,
Our labour must be to pervert that end,
And out of good still to find means of evil;
Which oft times may succeed, so as perhaps
Shall grieve him, if I fail not, and disturb
His inmost Counsels from thir destin'd aim.
But see the angry Victor hath recall'd
His Ministers of vengeance and pursuit
Back to the Gates of Heav'n: The Sulphurous Hail
Shot after us in storm, oreblown hath laid
The fiery Surge, that from the Precipice
Of Heav'n receiv'd us falling, and the Thunder,
Wing'd with red Lightning and impetuous rage,
Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now
To bellow through the vast and boundless Deep.
Let us not slip th' occasion, whether scorn,
Or satiate fury yield it from our Foe.
Seest thou yon dreary Plain, forlorn and wilde,
The Seat of desolation, voyd of light,
Save what the glimmering of these livid flames
Casts pale and dreadful? Thither let us tend

8 *Paradise Lost.* Book I.

From off the tossing of these fiery waves;
There rest, if any rest can harbour there,
And re-assembling our afflicted Powers,
Consult how we may henceforth most offend
Our Enemy, our own loss how repair,
How overcome this dire Calamity,
What reinforcement we may gain from Hope,
If not what resolution from despair.

Thus Satan talking to his nearest Mate
With Head up-lift above the wave, and Eyes
That sparkling blaz'd, his other Parts besides
Prone on the Flood, extended long and large
Lay floating many a rood, in bulk as huge
As whom the Fables name of monstrous size,
Titanian, or *Earth-born*, that Warr'd on *Jove*,
Briareos or *Typhon*, whom the Den
By ancient *Tarsus* held, or that Sea beast
Leviathan, which God of all his works
Created hugest that swim th' Ocean stream :
Him haply slumbering on the *Norway* foam
The Pilot of some small night-founder'd Skiff,
Deeming some Island, oft, as Sea-men tell,
With fixed Anchor in his skaly rind
Moors by his side under the Lee, while Night
Invests the Sea, and wished Morn delays :
So stretcht out huge in length the Arch-fiend lay
Chain'd on the burning Lake, nor ever thence
Had ris'n or heav'd his head, but that the will
And high permission of all-ruling Heaven
Left him at large to his own dark designs,
That with reiterated crimes he might
Heap on himself damnation, while he sought
Evil to others, and enrag'd might see
How all his malice serv'd but to bring forth

Infinite

Infinite goodness, grace and mercy shew'n
On Man by him seduc't, but on himself
Treb'l confusion, wrath and vengeance pour'd,
Forthwith upright he rears from off the Pool
His mighty Stature ; on each hand the flames
Driv'n backward slope thir pointing spires, and rowld
In Billows, leave i'th' midst a horrid Vale.
Then with expanded Wings he steers his flight
Aloft, incumbent on the dusky Air
That felt unusual weight, till on dry Land
He lights, if it were Land that ever burn'd
With solid, as the Lake with liquid fire ;
And such appear'd in hue, as when the force
Of subterranean Wind transports a Hill
Torn from *Pelorus*, or the shatter'd side
Of thundring *Aetna*, whose cumbustible
And fewel'd entrals thence conceiving Fire,
Sublim'd with Mineral fury, aid the Winds,
And leave a singed bottom all involv'd
With stench and smoak : Such resting found the sole
Of unblest feet. Him followed his next Mate,
Both glorying to have scap't the *Stygian* flood
As Gods, and by thir own recover'd strength,
Not by the sufferance of supernal Power.

Is this the Region, this the Soil, the Clime,
Said then the lost Arch-Angel, this the Seat
That we must change for Heav'n, this mournful gloom
For that Celestial light ? Be it so, since he
Who now is Sovran can dispose and bid
What shall be right : fardest from him is best
Whom reason hath equald, force hath made suprem
Above his equals. Farewel happy Fields
Where Joy for ever dwells : Hail horrors, hail
Infernal World, and thou profoundest Hell

Receive

Receive thy new Possessor : One who brings
 A mind not to be chang'd by Place or Time.
 The mind is its own place, and in it self
 Can make a Heav'n of Hell, a Hell of Heav'n.
 What matter where, if I be still the same,
 And what I should be, all but less then he
 Whom Thunder hath made greater ? Here at least
 We shall be free ; th' Almighty hath not built
 Here for his envy, will not drive us hence :
 Here we may Reign secure, and in my choyce
 To Reign is worth ambition though in Hell :
 Better to Reign in Hell, then serve in Heav'n.
 But wherefore let we then our faithful friends,
 Th' associates and copartners of our loss
 Lye thus astonisht on th' oblivious Pool,
 And call them not to share with us their part
 In this unhappy Mansion, or once more
 With rallied Arms to try what may be yet
 Regaind in Heav'n, or what more lost in Hell ?

So *Satan* spake, and him *Beelzebub*
 Thus answer'd. Leader of those Armies bright,
 Which but th' Omnipotent none could have toyld,
 If once they hear that voyce, thir liveliest pledge
 Of hope in fears and dangers, heard so oft
 In worst extreams, and on the perilous edge
 Of battel when it rag'd, in all assaults
 Thir surest signal, they will soon resume
 New courage and revive, though now they lye
 Groveling and prostrate on yon Lake of Fire,
 As we crewhile, astounded and amaz'd,
 No wonder, fall'n such a pernicious highth.

He scarce had ceas'd when the superiour Fiend
 Was moving toward the shoar ; his ponderous shield
 Ethereal temper, massy, large and round,

Be-

Behind him cast ; the broad circumference
 Hung on his shoulders like the Moon, whose Orb
 Through Optic Glas the *Tuscan* Artist views
 At Ev'ning from the top of *Fesole*,
 Or in *Valdarno*, to descry new Lands,
 Rivers or Mountains in her spotty Globe.
 His Spear, to equal which the tallest Pine
 Hewn on *Norwegian* Hills, to be the Mast
 Of some great Ammiral, where but a wand,
 He walkt with to support uneasy steps
 Over the burning Marle, not like those steps
 On Heavens Azure, and the torrid Clime
 Smote on him sore besides, vaulted with Fire ;
 Nathless he so endur'd, till on the Beach
 Of that inflamed Sea, he stood and call'd
 His Legions, Angel Forms, who lay intrans't
 Thick as Autumnal Leaves that strow the Brooks
 In *Vallombrosa*, where th' *Etrurian* shades
 High overarch't imbowr ; or scatterd sedge
 Afloat, when with fierce Winds *Orion* arm'd
 Hath vext the Red-Sea Coast, whose waves orethrew
Busiris and his *Memphian* Chivalry,
 While with perfidious hatred they pursu'd
 The Sojourners of *Goshen*, who beheld
 From the safe shore thir floating Carkases
 And broken Chariot Wheels ; so thick bestrown
 Abject and lost lay these, covering the Flood,
 Under amazement of thir hideous change.
 He call'd so loud, that all the hollow Deep
 Of Hell resounded. Princes, Potentates,
 Warriors, the Flowr of Heav'n, once yours, now lost,
 If such astonishment as this can sieze
 Eternal Spirits ; or have ye chos'n this place
 After the toyl of Battel to repose

- Your

Your wearied vertue, for the ease you find
 To slumber here, as in the Vales of Heav'n?
 Or in this abject posture have ye sworn
 To adore the Conquerour? Who now beholds
 Cherube and Seraph rowling in the Flood
 With scatter'd Arms and Ensigns, till anon
 His swift pursuers from Heav'n Gates discern
 Th' advantage, and descending tread us down
 Thus drooping, or with linked Thunderbolts
 Transfix us to the bottom of this Gulfe.
 Awake, arise, or be for ever fall'n.

They heard, and were abasht, and up they sprung
 Upon the Wing, as when men wont to watch
 On duty, sleeping found by whom they dread,
 Rouze and bestir themselves ere well awake.
 Nor did they not perceave the evil plight
 In which they were, or the fierce pains not feel;
 Yet to their Generals Voyce they soon obeyd
 Innumerable. As when the potent Rod
 Of *Amrims* Son in *Egypt*s evil day
 Wav'd round the Coast, up call'd a pitchy Cloud
 Of *Locusts*, warping on the Eastern Wind,
 That o're the Realm of impious *Pharaoh* hung
 Like Night, and darken'd all the Land of *Nile*:
 So numberless were those bad Angels seen
 Hovering on Wing under the Cope of Hell
 'Twixt upper, nether, and surrounding Fires;
 Till, as a signal giv'n, th' uplifted Spear
 Of thir great Sultan waving to direct
 Thir course, in even ballance down they light
 On the firm Brimstone, and fill all the Plain;
 A multitude, like which the populous North
 Pour'd never from her frozen loyns, to pass
Rhene or the *Danaw*, when her barbarous Sons

Came

Came like a Deluge on the South, and spread
Beneath *Gibraltar* to the *Lybian* sands.
Forthwith from every Squadron and each Band
The heads and Leaders thither hast where stood
Thir great Commander; Godlike shapes and forms
Excelling human, Princely Dignities,
And Powers that earst in Heaven sat on Thrones;
Though of thir Names in Heav'nly Records now
Be no memorial, blotted out and ras'd
By thir Rebellion, from the Books of Life.
Nor had they yet among the Sons of *Eve*
Got them new Names, till wandering o're the Earth,
Through God's high sufferance for the tryal of man,
By fallacies and lyes the greatest part
Of Mankind they corrupted to forsake
God thir Creator, and th' invisible
Glory of him that made them, to transform
Oft to the Image of a Brute, adorn'd
With gay Religions full of Pomp and Gold,
And Devils to adore for Deities;
Then were they known to men by various Names,
And various Idols through the Heathen World.
Say, Muse, thir Names then known, who first, who last,
Rous'd from the slumber, on that fiery Couch,
At thir great Emperors call, as next in worth
Came singly where he stood on the bare strand,
While the promiscuous croud stood yet aloof?
The cheif were those who from the Pit of Hell
Roaming to seek thir prey on earth, durst fix
Thir Seats long after next the Seat of God,
Thir Altars by his Altar, God's ador'd
Among the Nations round, and durst abide
Jehovah thundring out of *Sion*, Thron'd
Between the Cherubim; yea, often plac'd

Within

Within his Sanctuary it self thir Shrines,
Abominations; and with cursed things
His holy Rites, and solemn Feasts profan'd,
And with thir darkness durst affront his light.
First *Moloch*, horrid King besmear'd with blood
Of human Sacrifice, and Parents tears,
Though for the noyse of Drums and Timbrels loud
Thir Childrens cries unheard, that past through fire
To his grim Idol. Him the *Ammonite*
Worshipt in *Rabba* and her watry Plain,
In *Argob* and in *Basan*, to the stream
Of utmost *Arnon*. Nor content with such
Audacious neighbourhood, the wisest heart
Of *Solomon* he led by fraud to build
His Temple right against the Temple of God
On that opprobrious Hill, and made his Grove
The pleasant Vally of *Hinnon*, *Tophet* thence
And black *Gehenna* call'd, the Type of Hell.
Next *Chemos*, th' obscene dread of *Moabs* Sons,
From *Aroar* to *Nebo*, and the wild
Of Southmost *Abarim*; in *Hesebon*
And *Horonaim*, *Seons* Realm, beyond
The flowry Dale of *Sihna* clad with Vines,
And *Eleale* to th' *Asphaltick* Pool.
Peor his other Name, when he entic'd
Israel in *Sittim* on thir march from *Nile*
To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe.
Yet thence his lustful Orgies he enlarg'd
Even to that Hill of scandal, by the Grove
Of *Moloch* homicide, lust hard by hate;
Till good *Josiah* drove them thence to Hell.
With these came they, who from the bordring flood
Of old *Euphrates* to the Brook that parts
Egypt from *Syrian* ground, had general Names

Of *Baalim* and *Ashtaroth*, those Male,
 These Feminine. For Spirits when they please
 Can either Sex assume, or both; so soft
 And uncompounded is thir Essence pure,
 Not ty'd or manacl'd with joynt or limb,
 Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,
 Like cumbrous flesh; but in what shape they choose
 Dilated or condens't, bright or obscure,
 Can execute thir aerie purposes,
 And works of love or enmity fulfill.
 For those the Race of *Israel* oft forsook
 Thir living strength, and unfrequented left
 His righteous Altar, bowing lowly down
 To bestial gods; for which thir heads as low
 Bow'd down in Battel, sunk before the Spear
 Of despicable foes. With these in troop
 Came *Astoreth*, whom the *Phœnicians* call'd
Astarte, Queen of Heav'n, with crescent Horns;
 To whose bright Image nightly by the Moon
Sidonian Virgins paid thir Vows and Songs,
 In *Sion* also not unsung, where stood
 Her Temple on th' offensive Mountain, built
 By that uxorious King, whose heart though large,
 Beguil'd by fair Idolatresses, fell
 To Idols foul. *Thammuz* came next behind,
 Whose annual wound in *Lebanon* allur'd
 The *Syrian* Damsels to lament his fate
 In amorous dittyes all a Summers day,
 While smooth *Adonis* from his native Rock
 Ran purple to the Sea, suppos'd with blood
 Of *Thammuz* yearly wounded: the Love-tale
 Infected *Sions* Daughters with like heat,
 Whose wanton passions in the sacred Porch
Ezekiel saw, when by the Vision led

His

His eye survey'd the dark Idolatries
Of alienated *Judah*. Next came one
Who mourn'd in earnest, when the Captive Ark
Maim'd his brute Image, head and hands lopt off
In his own Temple, on the grunsel edge,
Where he fell flat, and sham'd his Worshipers :
Dagon his Name, Sea Monster, upward Man
And downward Fish : yet had his Temple high
Rear'd in *Azotus*, dreaded through the Coast
Of *Palestine*, in *Gath* and *Ascalon*
And *Accaron* and *Gaza's* frontier bounds.
Him follow'd *Rimmon*, whose delightful Seat
Was fair *Damascus*, on the fertil Banks
Of *Abbana* and *Pharphar*, lucid streams.
He also against the House of God was bold :
A Leper once he lost and gain'd a King,
Abaz his sottish Conquerour, whom he drew
God's Altar to disparage and displace
For one of *Syrian* mode, whereon to burn
His odious Offerings, and adore the gods
Whom he had vanquisht. After these appear'd
A crew who under Names of old Renown,
Osiris, *Isis*, *Orus*, and thir Train
With monstrous shapes and Sorceries abus'd
Fanatic *Egypt* and her Priests, to seek
Thir wandring gods disguis'd in brutish forms
Rather than human. Nor did *Israel* scape
Th' infection when thir borrow'd Gold compos'd
The Calf in *Oreb* : and the Rebel King
Doubl'd that sin in *Bethel* and in *Dan*,
Lik'ning his Maker to the Grazed Ox,
Jehovah, who in one Night when he pass'd
From *Egypt* marching, equal'd with one stroke
Both her first born and all her bleating gods.

Belial

Belial came last, then whom a Spirit more lewd
 Fell not from Heaven, or more gross to love
 Vice for it self: To him no Temple stood
 Or Altar smoak'd; yet who more oft then he
 In Temples and at Altars, when the Priest
 Turns Atheist, as did *Ely's* Sons, who fill'd
 With lust and violence the house of God.
 In Courts and Palaces he also Reigns
 And in luxurious Cities, where the noyse
 Of riot ascends above thir loftiest Towers,
 And injury and outrage: And when Night
 Darkens the Streets, then wander forth the Sons
 Of *Belial*, flown with insolence and wine.
 Witness the Streets of *Sodom*, and that night
 In *Gibeah*, when the hospitable door
 Expos'd a Matron to avoid worse rape:
 These were the prime in order and in might;
 The rest were long to tell, though far renown'd,
 Th' *Ionian* Gods, of *Javans* Issue held
 Gods, yet confest later then Heav'n and Earth
 Thir boasted Parents; *Titan* Heav'ns first-born
 With his enormous brood, and birthright seis'd
 By younger *Saturn*, he from mightier *Jove*
 His own and *Rhea's* Son like measure found;
 So *Jove* usurping reign'd: these first in *Creet*
 And *Ida* known, thence on the Snowy top
 Of cold *Olympus* rul'd the middle Air
 Thir highest Heav'n; or on the *Delphian* Cliff,
 Or in *Dodona*, and through all the bounds
 Of *Doric* Land; or who with *Saturn* old
 Fled over *Adria* to th' *Hesperian* Fields,
 And o're the *Celtic* roam'd the utmost Isles.
 All these and more came flocking; but with looks
 Down cast and damp, yet such wherein appear'd

Obscure some glimps of joy, to have found thir chief.
 Not in despare, to have found themselves not lost
 In loss it self; which on his count'nance cast
 Like doubtful hue: but he his wonted pride
 Soon recollecting, with high words, that bore
 Semblance of worth, not substance, gently rais'd
 Thir fainting courage, and dispel'd thir fears.
 Then strait commands that at the warlike sound
 Of Trumpets loud and Clarions be upreard
 His mighty Standard; that proud honour claim'd
Azazel as his right, a Cherub tall:
 Who forthwith from the glittering Staff unfurl'd
 Th' Imperial Ensign, which full high advanc't
 Shon like a Meteor streaming to the Wind
 With Gemms and Golden lustre rich imblaz'd,
 Seraphic Arms and Trophies: all the while
 Sonorous mettal blowing Martial sounds:
 At which the universal Host upsent
 A shout that tore Hells Concave, and beyond
 Frighted the Reign of *Chaos* and old Night.
 All in a moment through the gloom were seen
 Ten thousand Banners rise into the Air
 With Orient Colours waving: with them rose
 A Forrest huge of Spears: and thronging Helms
 Appear'd, and serried Shields in thick array
 Of depth immeasurable: Anon they move
 In perfect *Phalanx* to the *Dorian* mood
 Of Flutes and soft Recorders; such as rais'd
 To hight of noblest temper Hero's old
 Arming to Battel, and in stead of rage
 Deliberate valour breath'd, firm and unmov'd
 With dread of death to flight or foul retreat,
 Nor wanting power to mitigate and swage
 With solemn touches, troubl'd thoughts, and chase
 Anguish

BOOK I. *Paradise Lost.*

19

Anguish and doubt and fear and sorrow and pain
 From mortal or immortal minds. Thus they
 Breathing united force with fixed thought
 Mov'd on in silence to soft Pipes that charm'd
 Their painful steps o're the burnt soyle; and now
 Advanc't in view, they stand, a horrid Front
 Of dreadful length and dazzling Arms, in guise
 Of Warriors old with order'd Spear and Shield,
 Awaiting what command thir mighty Chief
 Had to impose: He through the armed Files
 Darts his experienc't eye, and soon traverse
 The whole Battalion views, thir order due,
 Thir visages and stature as of Gods,
 Thir number last he summs. And now his heart
 Distends with pride, and hardning in his strength
 Glories: For never since created man,
 Met such imbodied force, as nam'd with these
 Could merit more then that small infantry
 Warr'd on by Cranes: though all the Giant brood
 Of *Phlegra* with th' Heroic Race were joyn'd
 That fought at *Theb's* and *Ilium*, on each side
 Mixt with auxiliar Gods; and what resounds
 In Fable or *Romance* of *Uthers* Son
 Begirt with *British* and *Armoric* Knights;
 And all who since, Baptiz'd or Infidel
 Jousted in *Aspramont* or *Montalban*,
Damasco, or *Marocco*, or *Trebisond*,
 Or whom *Biserta* sent from *Afric* shore
 When *Charlemain* with all his Peerage fell
 By *Fontarabbia*. Thus far these beyond
 Compare of mortal prowess, yet observ'd
 Thir dread Commander: he above the rest
 In shape and gesture proudly eminent
 Stood like a Tower; his form had yet not lost

All her Original brightness, nor appear'd
Less then Arch Angel ruin'd, and the excess
Of Glory obscur'd : As when the Sun new ris'n
Looks through the Horizontal misty Air
Shorn of his Beams, or from behind the Moon
In dim Eclips disastrous twilight sheds
On half the Nations, and with fear of change
Perplexes Monarchs. Darkn'd so, yet shon
Above them all th' Arch Angel : but his face
Deep scars of Thunder had intrencht, and care
Sat on his faded cheek, but under Browes
Of dauntless courage, and considerate Pride
Waiting revenge : cruel his eye, but cast
Signs of remorse and passion to behold
The fellows of his crime, the followers rather
(Far other once beheld in bliss) condemn'd
For ever now to have thir lot in pain,
Millions of Spirits for his fault amerc't
Of Heav'n, and from Eternal Splendors flung
For his revolt, yet faithful how they stood,
Thir Glory witherd. As when Heavens fire
Hath scath'd the Forrest Oaks, or Mountain Pines,
With singed top thir stately growth though bare
Stands on the blasted Heath. He now prepar'd
To speak ; whereat thir doubl'd Ranks they bend
From wing to wing, and half inclose him round
With all his Peers : attention held them mute.
Thrice he assayd, and thrice in spight of scorn,
Tears such as Angels weep, burst forth : at last
Words interwove with sighs found out thir way.

O Myriads of immortal Spirits, O Powers
Matchless, but with th' Almighty, and that strife
Was not inglorious, though th' event was dire,
As this place testifies, and this dire change

Hateful

Hateful to utter: But what power of mind
 Foreseeing or presaging, from the Depth
 Of knowledge past or present, could have fear'd,
 How such united force of Gods, how such
 As stood like these, could ever know repulse?
 For who can yet believe, though after loss,
 That all these puissant Legions, whose exile
 Hath emptied Heav'n, shall fail to re-ascend
 Self-rai'd, and repossess their native seat?
 For mee be witness all the Host of Heav'n,
 If counsels different, or danger shun'd
 By mee, have lost our hopes. But he who reigns
 Monarch in Heav'n, till then as one secure
 Sat on his Throne, upheld by old repute,
 Consent or custome; and his Regal State
 Put forth at full, but still his strength conceal'd,
 Which tempted our attempt, and wrought our fall.
 Henceforth his might we know, and know our own
 So as not either to provoke, or dread
 New warr, provok't; our better part remains
 To work inclose design, by fraud or guile
 What force effected not: That he no less
 At length from us may find, who overcomes
 By force, hath overcome but half his foe.
 Space may producenew Worlds; whereof so rife
 There went a fame in Heav'n that he ere long
 Intended to create, and therein plant
 A generation, whom his choice regard
 Should favour equal to the Sons of Heaven:
 Thither, if but to pry, shall be perhaps
 Our first eruption, thither or elsewhere:
 For this Infernal Pit shall never hold
 Cælestial Spirits in Bondage, nor th' Abyss
 Long under darkness cover. But these thoughts

Full Counsel must mature : Peace is despair'd,
 For who can think Submission ? Warr then, Warr
 Open or understood must be resolv'd.

He spake : and to confirm his words, out-flew
 Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs
 Of mighty Cherubim ; the sudden blaze
 Far round illumin'd hell : highly they rag'd
 Against the Highest, and fierce with grasped Arms
 Clash'd on thir sounding Shields the din of war,
 Hurling defiance toward the Vault of Heav'n.

There stood a Hill not far whose griesly top
 Belch'd fire and rowling smoak ; the rest entire
 Shon with a glossie scurff, undoubted sign
 That in his womb was hid metallic Ore,
 The work of Sulphur. Thither wing'd with speed
 A numerous Brigad hasten'd. As when Bands
 Of Pioners with Spade and Pickax arm'd
 Forerun the Royal Camp, to trench a Field,
 Or cast a Rampart. *Mammon* led them on,
Mammon, the least erected Spirit that fell
 From heav'n, for ev'n in heav'n his looks & thoughts
 Were always downward bent, admiring more
 The riches of Heav'n's pavement, trod'n Gold,
 Then aught divine or holy else enjoy'd
 In vision beatific : by him first
 Men also, and by his suggestion taught,
 Ranfack'd the Center, and with impious hands
 Riff'd the bowels of thir mother Earth
 For Treasures better hid. Soon had his crew
 Op'nd into the Hill a spacious wound
 And dig'd out ribs of Gold. Let none admire
 That riches grow in Hell ; that soyle may best
 Deserve the precious bane. And here let those
 Who boast in mortal things, and wond'ring tell

Of *Babel*, and the works of *Memphian* Kings,
Learn how thir greatest Monuments of Fame,
And Strength and Art are easily out-done
By Spirits reprobate, and in an hour
What in an age they with incessant toyle
And hands innumerable scarce perform.
Nigh on the Plain in many cells prepar'd,
That underneath had veins of liquid fire
Sluc'd from the Lake, a second multitude
With wond'rous Art found out the massie Ore,
Severing each kind, and scum'd the Bullion dross:
A third as soon had form'd within the ground
A various mould, and from the boyling cells
By strange conveyance fill'd each hollow nook,
As in an Organ from one blast of wind
To many a row of Pipes the sound-board breaths.
Anon out of the earth a Fabrick huge
Rose like an Exhalation, with the sound
Of Dulcet Symphonies and voyces sweet,
Built like a Temple, where *Pilasters* round
Were set, and Doric pillars overlaid
With Golden Architrave; nor did there want
Cornice or Freeze, with bossy Sculptures grav'n,
The Roof was fretted Gold. Not *Babylon*,
Nor great *Alcairo* such magnificence
Equal'd in all thir glories, to inshrine
Belus or *Serapis* thir Gods, or seat
Thir Kings, when *Egypt* with *Assyria* strove
In wealth and luxury. Th' ascending pile
Stood fixt her stately highth, and strait the dores
Op'ning thir brazen foulds discover wide
Within, her ample spaces, o're the smooth
And level pavement: from the arched roof
Pendant by subtle Magic many a row

Of Starry Lamps and blazing Cressets fed
 With *Naphtha* and *Asphaltus* yeilded light
 As from a sky. The hasty multitude
 Admiring enter'd, and the work some praise
 And some the Architect : his hand was known
 In Heav'n by many a Towred structure high,
 Where Scepter'd Angels held thir residence,
 And sat as Princes, whom the supreme King
 Exalted to such power, and gave to rule,
 Each in his Hierarchie, the Orders bright.
 Nor was his name unheard or unador'd
 In ancient *Greece*; and in *Ausonian* land
 Men call'd him *Mulciber*; and how he fell
 From Heav'n, they fabl'd, thrown by angry *Jove*
 Sheer o're the Chrystal Battlements; from Morn
 To Noon he fell, from Noon to dewy Eve,
 A Summers day; and with the setting Sun
 Dropt from the Zenith like a falling Star,
 On *Lemnos* th' *Aegean* Ile : thus they relate,
 Erring; for he with this rebellious rout
 Fell long before; nor aught avail'd him now
 To have built in Heav'n high Towrs; nor did he scape
 By all his Engins, but was headlong sent
 With his industrious crew to build in hell.
 Mean while the winged Heralds by command
 Of Sovran power, with awful Ceremony
 And Trumpets sound throughout the Host proclaim
 A solemn Council forthwith to be held
 At *Pandemonium*, the high Capital
 Of Satan and his Peers : thir summons call'd
 From every Band and squared Regiment
 By place or choice the worthiest; they anon
 With hundreds and with thousands trooping came
 Attended : all access was throng'd, the Gates

And

And Porches wide, but chief the spacious Hall
 (Though like a cover'd fi el'd, where Champions bold
 Wont ride in arm'd, and at the Soldans chair
 Desi'd the best of *Panin* chivalry
 To mortal combat or carreer with Lance)
 Thick swarm'd, both on the ground and in the air,
 Brusht with the his of rusling wings. As Bees
 In spring time, when the Sun with *Taurus* rides,
 Pour forth thir populous youth about the Hive
 In clusters; they among fresh dewes and flowers
 Fly to and fro, or on the smoothed Plank,
 The suburb of thir Straw-built Cittadel,
 New rub'd with Baum, expatiate and confer
 Thir State affairs. So thick the aerie crowd
 Swarm'd and were straitn'd; till the Signal giv'n.
 Behold a wonder! they but now who seem'd
 In bigness to surpass Earths Giant Sons
 Now less then smallest Dwarfs, in narrow room
 Throng numberless, like that Pigmean Race
 Beyond the *Indian* Mount, or Faerie Elves,
 Whose midnight Revels, by a Forrest side
 Or Fountain some belated Peasant sees,
 Or dreams he sees, while over-head the Moon
 Sits Arbitress, and neerer to the Earth
 Wheels her pale course, they on thir mirth and dance
 Intent, with jocond Music charm his ear;
 At once with joy and fear his heart rebounds.
 Thus incorporeal Spirits to smallest forms
 Reduc'd thir shapes immense, and were at large,
 Though without number still amidst the Hall
 Of that infernal Court. But far within
 And in thir own dimensions like themselves
 The great Seraphic Lords and Cherubim

In

And

In close recess and secret conclave sat
A thousand Demy-Gods on golden seats,
Frequent and full. After short silence then
And summons read, the great consult began.

The End of the First Book.

Paradise

Paradise Lost.

BOOK II.

THE ARGUMENT.

The Consultation begun, Satan debates whether another Battel be to be hazarded for the recovery of Heaven: some advise it, others dissuade: A third proposal is prefer'd, mention'd before by Satan, to search the truth of that Propheſie or Tradition in Heaven concerning another world, and another kind of creature equal or not much inferiour to themſelves, about this time to be created: Their doubt who ſhall be ſent on this difficult ſearch: Satan their chief undertakes alone the voyage, is honour'd and applauded. The Council thus ended, the reſt betake them ſeveral wayes and to ſeveral employments, as their inclinations lead them, to entertain the time till Satan return. He paſſes on his Journey to Hell Gates, finds them ſhut, and who ſat there to guard them, by whom at length they are open'd, and diſcover to him the great Gulf between Hell and Heaven; with what difficulty he paſſes through directed by Chaos, the Power of that place, to the ſight of this new World which he ſought.

High

High on a Throne of Royal State, which far
 Outshon the wealth of *Ormus* and of *Ind*,
 Or where the gorgeous East with richest
 (hand

Shows on her Kings *Barbaric* Pearl and Gold,
 Satan exalted sat, by merit rais'd
 To that bad eminence; and from despair
 Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires
 Beyond thus high, insatiate to pursue
 Vain Warr with Heav'n, and by success untaught
 His proud imaginations thus displaid.

Powers and Dominions, Deities of Heav'n,
 For since no deep within her gulf can hold
 Immortal vigor, though oppress'd and falln,
 I give not Heav'n for lost. From this descent
 Celestial vertues rising, will appear
 More glorious and more dread then from no fall,
 And trust themselves to fear no second fate:
 Mee though just right, and the fixt Laws of Heav'n
 Did first create your Leader, next free choice,
 With what besides, in Counsel or in Fight,
 Hath been achievd of merit, yet this loss
 Thus farr at least recover'd, hath much more
 Establish'd in a safe unenvied Throne
 Yielded with full consent. The happier state
 In Heav'n, which follows dignity, might draw
 Envy from each inferior; but who here
 Will envy whom the highest place exposes
 Formost to stand against the Thunderers aim
 Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share
 Of endless pain? Where there is then no good
 For which to strive, no strife can grow up there
 From Faction; for none sure will claim in Hell

Prece-

Precedence, none, whose portion is so small
Of present pain, that with ambitious mind
Will covet more. With this advantage then
To union, and firm Faith, and firm accord,
More then can be in Heav'n, we now return
To claim our just inheritance of old,
Surer to prosper then prosperity

Could have assur'd us; and by what best way,
Whether of open Warr or covert guile,
We now debate; who can advise, may speak.

He ceas'd, and next him *Moloch*, Scepter'd King
Stood up, the strongest and the fiercest Spirit
That fought in Heav'n; now fiercer by despair:
His trust was with th' Eternal to be deem'd
Equal in strength, and rather then be less
Car'd not to be at all; with that care lost
Went all his fear: of God, or Hell, or worse
He reck'd not, and these words thereafter spake.

My sentence is for open War: of Wiles,
More unexpert, I boast not: them let those
Contrive who need, or when they need, not now:
For while they sit contriving, shall the rest,
Millions that stand in Arms, and longing wait
The Signal to ascend, sit lingring here
Heav'n's fugitives, and for thir dwelling place
Accept this dark opprobrious Den of shame,
The Prison of his Tyranny who Reigns
By our delay? no, let us rather choose
Arm'd with Hell flames and fury all at once
O're Heav'n's high Towrs to force resistless way,
Turning our Tortures into horrid Arms
Against the Torturer; when to meet the noise
Of his Almighty Engin he shall hear
Infernal Thunder, and for Lightning see

Black

Black fire and horror shot with equal rage
Among his Angels ; and his Throne it self
Mixt with *Tartarean* Sulphur, and strange fire,
His own invented Torments. But perhaps
The way seems difficult and steep to scale
With upright wing against a higher foe.
Let such bethink them, if the sleepy drench
Of that forgetful Lake benumm not still,
That in our proper motion we ascend
Up to our native seat : descent and fall
To us is adverse. Who but felt of late
When the fierce Foe hung on our brok'n Rear
Insulting, and pursu'd us through the Deep,
With what compulsion and laborious flight
We sunk thus low ? The ascent is easie then ;
Th' event is fear'd ; should we again provoke
Our stronger, some worse way his wrath may find
To our destruction : if there be in Hell
Fear to be worse destroy'd : what can be worse
Then to dwell here, driv'n out from blis, condemn'd
In this abhorred deep to utter woe ;
Where pain of unextinguishable fire
Must exercise us without hope of end
The Vassals of his anger, when the Scourge
Inexorably, and the torturing hour
Calls us to Penance ? More destroy'd then thus
We should be quite abolisht and expire.
What fear we then ? what doubt we to incense
His utmost ire ? which to the highth enrag'd,
Will either quite consume us, and reduce
To nothing this essential, happier farr
Then miserable to have eternal being :
Or if our substance be indeed Divine,
And cannot cease to be, we are at worst

On this side nothing ; and by proof we feel
Our power sufficient to disturb his Heav'n,
And with perpetual inrodes to Allarme,
Though inaccessible, his fatal Throne :
Which if not Victory is yet Revenge.

He ended frowning, and his look denounc'd
Desperate revenge, and Bartel dangerous
To less then Gods. On th' other side up rose
Belial, in act more graceful and humane ;
A fairer person lost not Heav'n ; he seemd
For dignity compos'd and high exploit :
But all was false and hollow ; though his Tongue
Dropt Manna, and could make the worse appear
The better reason, to perplex and dash
Maturest Counsels : for his thoughts were low ;
To vice industrious, but to Nobler deeds
Timorous and slothful : yet he pleas'd the ear,
And with perswasive accent thus began.

I should be much for open Warr, O Peers,
As not behind in hate ; if what was urg'd
Main reason to perswade immediate Warr,
Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast
Ominous conjecture on the whole success :
When he who most excels in fact of Arms,
In what he counsels and in what excels
Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair
And utter dissolution, as the scope
Of all his aim, after some dire revenge.
First, what Revenge ? the Towrs of Heav'n are fill'd
With Armed watch, that render all access
Impregnable ; oft on the bordering Deep
Encamp thir Legions, or with obscure wing
Scout farr and wide into the Realm of night,
Scorning surprize. Or could we break our way

By

By force, and at our heels all Hell should rise
With blackest Insurrection, to confound
Heav'n's purest Light, yet our great Enemy
All incorruptible would on his Throne
Sit unpolluted, and th' Ethereal mould
Incapable of stain would soon expel
Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire
Victorious. Thus repuls'd, our final hope
Is flat despair: we must exasperate
Th' Almighty Victor to spend all his rage,
And that must end us, that must be our cure,
To be no more; sad cure; for who would loose,
Though full of pain; this intellectual being,
Those thoughts that wander through Eternity;
To perish rather, swallowd up and lost
In the wide womb of uncreated night,
Devoid of sense and motion? and who knows,
Let this be good, whether our angry Foe
Can give it, or will ever; how he can
Is doubtful; that he never will is sure.
Will he, so wise, let loose at once his ire,
Belike through impotence, or unaware,
To give his Enemies thir wish, and end
Them in his anger, whom his anger saves
To punish endless? wherefore cease we then?
Say they who counsel Warr, we are decreed,
Reserv'd and destin'd to Eternal woe;
Whatever doing, what can we suffer more,
What can we suffer worse? is this then worst,
Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in Arms;
What when we fled amain, pursu'd and strook
With Heav'n's afflicting Thunder, and besought
The Deep to shelter us; this Hell then seem'd
A refuge from those wounds: or when we lay

Chain'd

Chain'd on the burning Lake? that sure was worse:
 What if the breath that kindl'd those grim fires
 Awak'd should blow them into sevenfold rage
 And plunge us in the flames? or from above
 Should intermitted vengeance arm again
 His red right hand to plague us? what if all
 Her stores were open'd, and this Firmament
 Of Hell should spout her Cataracts of Fire;
 Impendent horrors, threatening hideous fall
 One day upon our heads; while we perhaps
 Designing or exhorting glorious warr,
 Caught in a fierie Tempest shall be hurl'd
 Each on his rock transfixt, the sport and prey
 Of racking whirlwinds, or for ever sunk
 Under yon boyling Ocean, wrapt in Chains;
 There to converse with everlasting groans,
 Unrespited, unpitied, unrepreevd,
 Ages of hopeles end; this would be worse.
 Warr therefore, open or conceal'd, alike
 My voice dissuades; for what can force or guile
 With him, or who deceive his mind, whose eye
 Views all things at one view? he from heav'n's highth
 All these our motions vain, sees and derides;
 Not more Almighty to resist our might
 Then wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.
 Shall we then live thus vile, the race of Heav'n
 Thus trampil'd, thus expell'd to suffer here
 Chains and these Torments? better these then worse
 By my advice; since Fate inevitable
 Subdues us, and Omnipotent Decree,
 The Victors will. To suffer, as to doe,
 Our strength is equal, nor the Law unjust
 That so ordains: This was at first resolv'd,
 If we were wise, against so great a foe

Contending, and so doubtful what might fall.
 I laugh, when those who at the Spear are bold
 And vent'rous, if that fail them, shrink and fear
 What yet they know must follow, to endure
 Exile, or ignominy, or bonds, or pain,
 The sentence of thir Conquerour : This is now
 Our doom ; which if we can sustain and bear,
 Our Supream Foe in time may much remit
 His anger, and perhaps thus farr remov'd
 Not mind us not offending, satisfi'd
 With what is punish't ; whence these raging fires
 Will slack'n, if his breath stir not thir flames.
 Our purer essence then will overcome
 Thir noxious vapour, or enur'd not feel,
 Or chang'd at length, and to the place conform'd
 In temper and in nature, will receive
 Familiar the fierce heat, and void of pain ;
 This horror will grow milde, this darkness light ;
 Besides what hope the never-ending flight
 Of future dayes may bring, what chance, what change
 Worth waiting, since our present lot appears
 For happy though but ill, for ill not worst,
 If we procure not to our selves more woe.

Thus *Belial* with words cloath'd in reasons garb
 Counsel'd ignoble ease, and peaceful sloath,
 Not peace : and after him thus *Mammon* spake.

Either to disenthroned the King of Heav'n
 We warr, if warr be best, or to regain
 Our own right lost : him to unthroned we then
 May hope when everlasting Fate shall yeild
 To fickle Chance, and *Chaos* judge the strife :
 The former vain to hope argues as vain
 The latter : for what place can be for us
 Within Heav'n's bound, unless Heav'n's Lord supream
 We

We overpower? Suppose he should relent
 And publish Grace to all, on promise made
 Of new Subjection; with what eyes could we
 Stand in his presence humble, and receive
 Strict Laws impos'd, to celebrate his Throne
 With warbl'd Hymns, and to his Godhead sing
 Forc't Halleluiah's; while he Lordly sits
 Our envied Sovran, and his Altar-breathes
 Ambrosial Odours and Ambrosial Flowers,
 Our servile offerings. This must be our task
 In Heav'n, this our delight; how wearisome
 Eternity so spent in worship paid
 To whom we hate. Let us not then pursue
 By force impossible, by leave obtain'd
 Unacceptable, though in Heav'n, our state
 Of splendid vassalage, but rather seek
 Our own good from our selves, and from our own
 Live to our selves, though in this vast recess,
 Free, and to none accountable, preferring
 Hard liberty before the easie yoke
 Of servile Pomp. Our greatness will appear
 Then most conspicuous, when great things of small,
 Useful of hurtful, prosperous of adverse
 We can create, and in what place so e're
 Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain
 Through labour and indurance. This deep world
 Of darkness do we dread? How oft amidst
 Thick clouds and dark doth Heav'n's all-ruling Sire
 Choose to reside, his Glory unobscur'd,
 And with the Majesty of darkness round
 Covers his Throne; from whence deep thunders roar
 Must ring thir rage, and Heav'n resembles Hell?
 As he our darkness, cannot we his Light
 Imitate when we please? This Desert soile

36 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK II.

Wants not her hidden lustre, Gems and Gold ;
 Nor want we skill or art, from whence to raise
 Magnificence ; and what can Heav'n shew more ?
 Our torments also may in length of time
 Become our Elements, these piercing Fires
 As soft as now severe, our temper chang'd
 Into their temper ; which must needs remove
 The sensible of pain. All things invite
 To peaceful Counsels, and the settl'd State
 Of order, how in safety best we may
 Compose our present evils, with regard
 Of what we are and were, dismissing quite
 All thoughts of Warr : Ye have what I advise.

He scarce had finish'd, when such murmur fill'd
 Th' Assembly, as when hollow Rocks retain
 The sound of blustering winds, which all night long
 Had rous'd the Sea, now with hoarse cadence lull
 Sea-faring men orewatcht, whose Bark by chance
 Or Pinnacle anchors in a craggy Bay
 After the Tempest : Such applause was heard
 As *Mammon* ended, and his Sentence pleas'd,
 Advising peace : For such another Field
 They dreaded worse then Hell : So much the fear
 Of Thunder and the Sword of *Michael*
 Wrought still within them ; and no less desire
 To found this nether Empire, which might rise
 By policy, and long process of time,
 In emulation opposite to Heav'n.
 Which when *Beelzebub* perceiv'd, then whom,
Satan except, none higher sat, with grave
 Aspect he rose, and in his rising seem'd
 A Pillar of State ; deep on his Front engraven
 Deliberation sat and public care ;
 And Princely counsel in his face yet shon,

Majestick

Majestick though in ruin : Sage he stood
With *Atlantean* shoulders fit to bear
The weight of mightiest Monarchies ; his look
Drew audience and attention still as Night
Or Summers Noon-tide air, while thus he spake.

Thrones and Imperial Powers, off-spring of heav'n,
Ethereal Vertues ; or these Titles now
Must we renounce, and changing stile be call'd
Princes of Hell ? For so the popular vote
Inclines, here to continue, and build up here
A growing Empire ; doubtless ; while we dream,
And know not that the King of Heav'n hath doom'd
This place our dungeon, not our safe retreat
Beyond his Potent arm, to live exempt
From Heav'n's high jurisdiction, in new League
Banded against his Throne, but to remaine
In strictest bondage, though thus far remov'd,
Under th' inevitable curb, reserv'd
His captive multitude : For he, be sure
In highth or depth, still first and last will Reign
Sole King, and of his Kingdom loose no part
By our revolt, but over Hell extend
His Empire, and with Iron Scepter rule
Us here, as with his Golden those in Heav'n.
What sit we then projecting peace and Warr ?
Warr hath determin'd us, and foild with loss
Irreparable ; tearms of peace yet none
Voutsaf't or sought ; for what peace will be giv'n
To us enslav'd, but custody severe,
And stripes, and arbitrary punishment
Inflicted ? and what peace can we return,
But to our power hostility and hate,
Untam'd reluctance, and revenge though slow,
Yet ever plotting how the Conqueror least

38 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK II.

May reap his conquest, and may least rejoyce
 In doing what we most in suffering feel ?
 Nor will occasion want, nor shall we need
 With dangerous expedition to invade
 Heav'n, whose high walls fear no assault or Siege,
 Or ambush from the Deep. What if we find
 Some easier enterprize ? There is a place
 (If ancient and prophetic fame in Heav'n
 Err not) another World, the happy seat
 Of some new Race call'd *Man*, about this time
 To be created like to us, though less
 In power and excellence, but favour'd more
 Of him who rules above ; so was his will
 Pronounc'd among the Gods, and by an Oath,
 That shook Heav'n's whol circumference, confirm'd.
 Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn
 What creatures there inhabit, of what mould,
 Or substance, how endu'd, and what thir Power,
 And where thir weakness, how attempted best,
 By force or suttlerly : Though Heav'n be shut,
 And Heav'n's high Arbitrator sit secure
 In his own strength, this place may lye expos'd
 The utmost border of his Kingdom, left
 To their defence who hold it : Here perhaps
 Som advantageous act may be achiev'd
 By sudden onset, either with Hell fire
 To waste his whole Creation, or possess
 All as our own, and drive as we were driven,
 The punie habitants, or if not drive,
 Seduce them to our Party, that thir God
 May prove thir foe, and with repenting hand
 Abolish his own works. This would surpass
 Common revenge, and interrupt his joy
 In our Confusion, and our Joy upraise

In his disturbance ; when his darling Sons
Hurl'd headlong to partake with us, shall curse
Thir frail Original, and faded blifs,
Faded so soon. Advise if this be worth
Attempting, or to sit in darkness here
Hatching vain Empires. Thus *Beelzebub*
Pleaded his devilish Counsel, first devis'd
By *Satan*, and in part propos'd : for whence,
But from the Author of all ill could spring
So deep a malice, to confound the race
Of mankind in one root, and Earth with Hell
To mingle and involve, done all to spite
The great Creatour ? But thir spite still serves
His glory to augment. The bold design
Pleas'd highly those infernal States, and joy
Sparkl'd in all thir eyes ; with full assent
They vote : whereat his speech he thus renews.

Well have ye judg'd, well ended long debate,
Synod of Gods, and like to what ye are,
Great things resolv'd, which from the lowest deep
Will once more lift us up, in spight of Fate,
Neerer our ancient Seat ; perhaps in view
Of those bright confines, whence with neighbouring
And opportune excursion we may chance (Arms
Re-enter Heav'n ; or else in some mild Zone
Dwell not unvisited of Heav'n's fair Light
Secure, and at the brightning Orient beam
Purge off this gloom ; the soft delicious Air,
To heal the scarr of these corrosive Fires
Shall breathe her balme. But first whom shall we send
In search of this new world, whom shall we find
Sufficient ? who shall tempt with wandring feet
The dark unbottom'd infinite Abyfs
And through the palpable obscure find out

His uncouth way, or spread his aerie flight
Upborn with indefatigable wings
Over the vast abrupt, ere he arrive
The happy Ile; what strength, what Art can then
Suffice; or what evasion bear him safe
Through the strict Senteries and Stations thick
Of Angels watching round? Here he had need
All circumspection, and we now no less
Choice in our suffrage; for on whom we send,
The weight of all and our last hope relies.

This said, he sat; and expectation held
His look suspence, awaiting who appear'd
To second or oppose, or undertake
The perilous attempt: But all sat mute,
Pondering the danger with deep thoughts; and each
In others count'nance read his own dismay
Astonisht: None among the choice and prime
Of those Heav'n-warring Champions could be found
So hardie as to proffer or accept
Alone the dreadful voyage; till at last
Satan, whom now transcendent glory rais'd
Above his fellows, with Monarchal pride
Conscious of highest worth, unmov'd thus spake.

O Progeny of Heav'n, Empyrean Thrones,
With reason hath deep silence and demurr
Seis'd us, though undismaid: Long is the way
And hard, that out of Hell leads up to light;
Our prison strong, this huge convex of Fire,
Outrageous to devour, immures us round
Ninefold, and gates of burning Adamant
Barr'd over us prohibit all egress.
These past, if any pass, the void profound
Of unessential Night receives him next
Wide gaping, and with utter loss of being

Threa-

Threatens him, plung'd in that abortive gulf.
If thence he scape into whatever world,
Or unknown Region, what remains him less
Then unknown dangers and as hard escape.
But I should ill become this Throne, O Peers,
And this Imperial Sov'raignty, adorn'd
With splendor, arm'd with power, if aught propos'd
And judg'd of public moment, in the shape
Of difficulty or danger could deter
Me from attempting. Wherefore do I assume
These Royalties, and not refuse to Reign,
Refusing to accept as great a share
Of hazard as of honour, due alike
To him who Reigns, and so much to him due
Of hazard more, as he above the rest
High honour'd sits? Go therefore mighty Powers,
Terror of Heav'n, though fall'n; intend at home,
While here shall be our home, what best may ease
The present misery, and render Hell
More tollerable; if there be cure or charm
To respite or deceive, or slack the pain
Of this ill Mansion: Intermit no watch
Against a wakeful Foe, while I abroad
Through all the Coasts of dark destruction seek
Deliverance for us all: This enterprize
None shall partake with me. Thus saying rose
The Monarch, and prevented all reply,
Prudent, least from his resolution rais'd
Others among the chief might offer now
(Certain to be refus'd) what erst they feard;
And so refus'd might in opinion stand
His Rivals, winning cheap the high repute
Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they
Dreaded not more th' adventure than his voice

For-

Forbidding; and at once with him they rose;
 Thir rising all at once was as the sound
 Of Thunder heard remote. Towards him they bend
 With awful reverence prone; and as a God
 Extoll him equal to the highest in Heav'n:
 Nor fail'd they to expresse how much they prais'd,
 That for the general safety he despis'd
 His own: for neither do the Spirits damn'd
 Loose all her vertue; least bad men should boast
 Thir specious deeds on Earth, which glory excites,
 Or close ambition varnish'd o're with zeal.
 Thus they thir doubtful Consultations dark
 Ended rejoycing in thir matchless Chief:
 As when from mountain tops the dusky clouds
 Ascending, while the North-wind sleeps, o'respread
 Heav'n's chearful face, the lowring Element
 Scowls o're the dark'nd lantskip Snow, or showre;
 If chance the radiant Sun with farewell sweet
 Extend his ev'ning beam, the fields revive,
 The birds thir notes renew, and bleating herds
 Attest thir joy, that hill and valley rings.
 O shame to men! Devil with Devil damn'd
 Firm concord holds, men onely disagree
 Of Creatures rational, though under hope
 Of heav'nly Grace: and God proclaiming peace,
 Yet live in hatred, enmity, and strife
 Among themselves, and levie cruel warres,
 Wasting the Earth, each other to destroy:
 As if (which might induce us to accord)
 Man had not hellish foes anow besides,
 That day and night for his destruction waite.

The *Strygian* Council thus dissolv'd; and forth
 In order came the grand infernal Peers,
 Midst came thir mighty Paramount, and seem'd

Alone

Alone th' Antagonist of Heav'n, nor less
 Then Hells dread Emperour with pomp Supream,
 And God-like imitated State ; him round
 A Globe of fierie Seraphim inclos'd
 With bright imblazonrie, and horrent Arms.
 Then of thir Session ended they bid cry
 With Trumpets regal sound the great result :
 Toward the four winds four speedy Cherubim
 Put to thir mouths the sounding Alchymie
 By Haralds voice explain'd : the hollow Abyss
 Heard farr and wide, and all the Host of Hell
 With deafning shour, return'd them loud acclaim.
 Thence more at ease thir minds and somewhat rais'd
 By false presumptuous hope, the raged powers
 Disband, and wandring, each his severall way
 Pursues, as inclination or sad choice
 Leads him perplext, where he may likeliest find
 Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain
 The irksom hours, till his great Chief return.
 Part on the Plain, or in the Air sublime
 Upon the wing, or in swift Race contend,
 As atth' Olympian Games or *Pythian* fields ;
 Part curb thir fierie Steeds, or shun the Goal
 With rapid wheels, or fronted Brigads form.
 As when to warn proud Cities warr appears
 Wag'd in the troubl'd Skie, and Armies rush
 To Battel in the Clouds, before each Van
 Prick forth the Aerie Knights, and couch thir Spears
 Till thickest Legions close ; with feats of Arms
 From either end of Heav'n the Welkin burns.
 Others with vast *Typhœan* rage more fell
 Rend up both Rocks and Hills, and ride the Air
 In whirlwind ; Hell scarce holds the wilde uproar.
 As when *Alcides* from *Oechalia* Crown'd

With

44 **Paradise Lost.** BOOK II.

With conquest, felt th' envenom'd robe, and tore
 Through pain up by the roots *Theſſalian* Pines,
 And *Lichas* from the top of *Oeta* threw
 Into th' *Euhoic* Sea. Others more milde,
 Retreated in a ſilent valley, ſing
 With notes Angelical to many a Harp
 Their own Heroic deeds and hapleſs fall
 By doom of Battel; and complain that Fate
 Free Vertue ſhould enthral to Force or Chance.
 Their Song was partial, but the harmony
 (What could it leſs when Spirits immortal ſing?)
 Suspended Hell, and took with raviſhment
 The thronging audience. In diſcourſe more ſweet
 (For Eloquence the Soul, Song charms the Senſe,)
 Others apart ſat on a Hill retir'd,
 In thoughts more elevate, and reaſon'd high
 Of Providence, Foreknowledg, Will and Fate,
 Fixt Fate, free will, foreknowledg abſolute,
 And found no end, in wandring mazes loſt.
 Of good and evil much they argu'd then,
 Of happineſs and final miſery,
 Paſſion and Apathie, and glory and ſhame,
 Vain wiſdom all, and falſe Philoſophie:
 Yet with a pleaſing forcerie could charm
 Pain for a while or anguiſh, and excite
 Fallacious hope, or arm th' obdured breſt
 With ſtubborn patience as with triple ſteel.
 Another part in Squadrons and groſs Bands,
 On bold adventure to diſcover wide
 That diſmal world, if any Clime perhaps
 Might yield them eaſier habitation, bend
 Four ways their flying March, along the Banks
 Of four infernal Rivers that diſgorge
 Into the burning Lake their baleful ſtreams;

Abhor-

Abhorred *Styx* the flood of deadly hate,
 Sad *Acheron* of sorrow, black and deep;
Cocytus, nam'd of lamentation loud
 Heard on the ruful stream; fierce *Phlegeton*
 Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.
 Farr off from these a flow and silent stream,
Lethe the River of Oblivion rouses
 Her watry Labyrinth, whereof who drinks,
 Forthwith his former state and being forgets,
 Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain.
 Beyond this flood a frozen Continent
 Lies dark and wilde, beat with perpetual storms
 Of Whirlwind and dire Hail, which on firm land
 Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems
 Of ancient pile; all else deep snow and ice,
 A gulf profound as that *Serbonian Bog*
 Betwixt *Damiata* and mount *Casius* old,
 Where Armies whole have sunk: the parching Air
 Burns froze, and cold performs th' effect of Fire.
 Thither by harpy-footed Furies hail'd,
 At certain revolutions all the damn'd
 Are brought: and feel by turns the bitter change
 Of fierce extreams, extreams by change more fierce,
 From Beds of raging Fire to starve in Ice
 Thir soft Ethereal warmth, and there to pine
 Immovable, infixt, and frozen round,
 Periods of time, thence hurried back to fire.
 They ferry over this *Lethean Sound*
 Both to and fro, thir sorrow to augment,
 And wish and struggle, as they pass, to reach
 The tempting stream, with one small drop to loose
 In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,
 All in one moment, and so neer the brink;
 But fate withstands, and to oppose th' attempt

Medusa

Medusa with *Gorgonian* terror guards
 The Ford, and of it self the water flies
 All taste of living wight, as once it fled
 The lip of *Tantalus*. Thus roving on
 In confus'd march forlorn, th' adventrous Bands
 With shuddring horror pale, and eyes agast
 View'd first thir lamentable lot, and found
 No rest: through many a dark and drearie Vale
 They pass'd, and many a Region dolorous,
 O're many a Frozen, many a fierie Alpe,
 Rocks, Caves, Lakes, Fens, Bogs, Dens, and shades of
 A Universe of death, which God by curse (death,
 Created evil, for evil only good,
 Where all life dies, death lives, and Nature breeds
 Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things,
 Abominable, inutterable, and worse
 Then Fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceiv'd,
Gorgons and *Hydras*, and *Chimera's* dire.

Mean while the Adversary of God and Man,
Satan with thoughts inflam'd of highest design,
 Puts on swift wings, and towards the Gates of Hell
 Explores his solitary flight; som times
 He scours the right hand coast, som times the left,
 Now shaves with level wing the Deep, then soars
 Up to the fiery Concave touring high.
 As when farr off at Sea a Fleet descri'd
 Hangs in the Clouds, by *Equinoctial* Winds
 Close sailing from *Bengala*, or the Iles
 Of *Ternate* and *Tidore*, whence Merchants bring
 Thir spicie Drugs: they on the Trading Flood
 Through the wide *Ethiopian* to the Cape
 Ply stemming nightly toward the Pole. So seem'd
 Farr off the flying Fiend; at last appeer
 Hell bounds high reaching to the horrid Roof,

And

And thrice threefold the Gates; three folds were Brasse,
 Three Iron, three of Adamantine Rock,
 Impenetrable, impal'd with circling fire,
 Yet unconsum'd. Before the Gates there sat
 On either side a formidable shape;
 The one seem'd Woman to the waste, and fair,
 But ended foul in many a scaly fould
 Voluminous and vast, a Serpent arm'd
 With mortal sting: about her middle round
 A cry of Hell Hounds never ceasing bark'd
 With wide *Cerberian* mouths full loud, and rung
 A hideous Peal: yet, when they list, would creep,
 If aught disturb'd thir noyse, into her wombe,
 And kennel there, yet there still bark'd and howl'd,
 Within unseen. Farr less abhorrd then these
 Vex'd *Scylla* bathing in the Sea that parts
Calabria from the hoarce *Trinacrian* shore:
 Nor uglier follow the Night-Hag, when call'd
 In secret, riding through the Air she comes
 Lur'd with the smell of infant blood, to dance
 With *Lapland* Witches, while the labouring Moon
 Eclipses at thir charms. The other shape,
 If shape it might be call'd, that shape had none
 Distinguishable in member, joynt, or limb,
 Or substance might be call'd that shadow seem'd,
 For each seem'd either; black it stood as Night,
 Fierce as ten Furies, terrible as Hell,
 And shook a dreadful Dart; what seem'd his head
 The likeness of a Kingly Crown had on.
Satan was now at hand, and from his seat
 The Monster moving onward came as fast
 With horrid strides, Hell trembled as he strode.
 Th' undaunted Fiend what this might be admir'd,
 Admir'd, nor fear'd; God and his Son except,
 Created

Created thing naught valu'd he nor shun'd ;
And with disdainful look thus first began.

Whence and what art thou, execrable shape,
That dar'st, though grim and terrible, advance
Thy miscreated Front athwart my way
To yonder Gates ? through them I mean to pass,
That be assur'd, without leave askt of thee :
Retire, or taste thy folly, and learn by proof,
Hell-born, not to contend with Spirits of Heav'n.

To whom the Goblin full of wrath reply'd,
Art thou that Traitor Angel, art thou hee,
Who first broke peace in Heav'n and Faith, till then
Unbrok'n, and in proud rebellious Arms
Drew after him the third part of Heav'n's Sons
Conjur'd against the highest, for which both thou
And they outcast from God, are here condemn'd
To waste Eternal daies in woe and pain ?
And reck'n'st thou thy self with Spirits of Heav'n,
Hell-doom'd, and breath'st defiance here and scorn
Where I reign King, and to enrage thee more,
Thy King and Lord ? Back to thy punishment,
False fugitive, and to thy speed add wings,
Least with a whip of Scorpions I pursue
Thy lingring, or with one stroke of this Dart
Strange horror seise thee, and pangs unfelt before.

So spake the griesly terrour, and in shape,
So speaking and so threatning, grew tenfold
More dreadful and deform : on th' other side
Incenc't with indignation *Satan* stood
Unterrifi'd, and like a Comet burn'd,
That fires the length of *Ophiurus* huge
In th' Artick Sky, and from his horrid hair
Shakes Pestilence and Warr. Each at the Head
Level'd his deadly aime ? thir fatall hands

No second stroke intend, and such a frown
 Each cast at th' other, as when two black Clouds
 With Heav'n's Artillery fraught, come rattling on
 Over the *Caspian*, then stand front to front
 Hov'ring a space, till Winds the signal blow
 To joyn thir dark Encounter in mid air :
 So frownd the mighty Combatants, that Hell
 Grew darker at thir frown, so matcht they stood ;
 For never but once more was either like
 To meet so great a foe : and now great deeds
 Had been achiev'd, whereof all Hell had rung,
 Had not the Snakie Sorcerers that sat
 Fast by Hell Gate, and kept the fatal Key,
 Ris'n, and with hideous outcry rush'd between.

O Father, what intends thy hand, she cry'd,
 Against thy only Son ? What fury O Son,
 Possesses thee to bend that mortal Dart
 Against thy Fathers head ? and know'st for whom ;
 For him who sits above and laughs the while
 At thee ordain'd his drudge, to execute
 What e're his wrath, which he calls Justice, bids,
 His wrath which one day will destroy ye both.

She spake, and at the words the hellish Pest
 Forbore, then these to her *Satan* return'd :

So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange
 Thou interposest, that my sudden hand
 Prevented spares to tell thee yet by deeds
 What it intends ; till first I know of thee ;
 What thing thou art, thus double-form'd, and why
 In this infernal Vaile first met thou call'st
 Me Father, and that Fantasie call'st my Son ?
 I know thee not, nor ever saw till now
 Sight more detestable then him and thee :

T' whom thus the Portress of Hell Gate reply'd ;
 Hast thou forgot me then ; and do I seem

E

Now

Now in thine eye so foul, once deem'd so fair
In Heav'n, when at th' Assembly, and in sight
Of all the Seraphim with thee combin'd
In bold conspiracy against Heav'n's King,
All on a sudden miserable pain
Surpris'd thee, dim thine eyes, and dizzie swumm
In darkness, while thy head flames thick and fast
Threw forth, till on the left side op'ning wide,
Likest to thee in shape and count'nance bright,
Then shining heav'nly fair, a Goddess arm'd
Out of thy head I sprung : amazement seiz'd
All th' Host of Heav'n ; back they recoild affraid
At first, call'd me *Sin*, and for a Sign
Portentous held me ; but familiar grown,
I pleas'd, and with attractive Graces won
The most averse, thee chiefly, who full oft
Thy self in me thy perfect image viewing
Becam' st enamour'd, and such joy thou took' st
With me in secret, that my womb conceiv'd
A growing burden. Mean while Warr arose,
And fields were fought in Heav'n ; wherein remain'd
(For what could else) to our Almighty Foe
Clear Victory, to our part loss and rout
Through all the Empyrean : down they fell
Driv'n headlong from the Pitch of Heaven, down
Into this Deep, and in the general fall
I also ; at which time this powerful Key
Into my hand was giv'n, with charge to keep
These Gates for ever shut, which none can pass
Without my op'ning. Pensive here I sat
Alone, but long I sat not, till my womb
Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown
Prodigious motion felt and rueful throes.
At last this odious offspring whom thou seest
Thine own begotten, breaking violent way

BOOK II. *Paradise Lost.* 51

Tore through my entrails, that with fear and pain
 Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew
 Transform'd : but he my inbred enemy
 Forth issu'd, brandishing his fatal Dart
 Made to destroy : I fled, and cry'd out *Death* ;
 Hell trembl'd at the hideous Name, and sigh'd
 From all her Caves, and back resounded *Death*.
 I fled, but he pursu'd (though more, it seems,
 Inflam'd with lust then rage) and swifter far,
 Me overtook his mother all dismay'd,
 And in embraces forcible and foule
 Ingendring with me, of that rape begot
 These yelling Monsters that with ceaseless cry
 Surround me, as thou sawst, hourly conceiv'd
 And hourly born, with sorrow infinite
 To me, for when they list into the womb
 That bred them they return, and howle and gnaw
 My Bowels, thir repast ; then bursting forth
 A fresh with conscious terrors vex me round,
 That rest or intermission none I find.
 Before mine eyes in opposition sits
 Grim *Death* my Son and foe, who sets them on ;
 And me his Parent would full soon devour
 For want of other prey, but that he knows
 His end with mine involv'd ; and knows that I
 Should prove a bitter Morsel, and his bane,
 When ever that shall be ; so Fate pronounc'd.
 But thou O Father, I forwarn thee, shun
 His deadly arrow ; neither vainly hope
 To be invulnerable in those bright Arms,
 Though temper'd heav'nly, for that mortal dint,
 Save he who reigns above, none can resist.

She finish'd, and the suttile Fiend his lore
 Soon learn'd, now milder, and thus answer'd smooth.
 Dear Daughter, since thou claim'st me for thy Sire, *And*

And my fair Son here showst me, the dear pledge
 Of dalliance had with thee in Heav'n, and joys
 Then sweet, now sad to mention, through dire change
 Befall'n us unforeseen, unthought of, know
 I come no enemy, but to set free
 From out this dark and dismal house of pain,
 Both him and thee, and all the heav'nly Host
 Of Spirits that in our just pretences arm'd
 Fell with us from on high: from whom I go
 This uncouth errand sole, and one for all
 My self expose, with lonely steps to tread
 Th' unfounded deep, and through the void immense
 To search with wandring quest a place foretold
 Should be, and, by concurring signs, ere now
 Created vast and round, a place of bliss
 In the Pourlicues of Heav'n, and therein plac'd
 A race of upstart Creatures, to supply
 Perhaps our vacant room, though more remov'd,
 Least Heav'n surcharg'd with potent multitude
 Might hap to move new broiles: Be this or aught
 Then this more secret now design'd, I haste
 To know, and this once known, shall soon return,
 And bring ye to the place where Thou and Death
 Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen
 Wing silently the buxom Air, imbalm'd
 With odours; there ye shall be fed and fill'd
 Immeasurably, all things shall be your prey.
 He ceas'd, for both seem'd highly pleas'd, and Death
 Grinn'd horrible a gashly smile, to hear
 His famine should be fill'd, and blest his mawe
 Destin'd to that good hour: no less rejoyc'd
 His mother bad, and thus bespake her Sire.

The key of this infernal Pit by due,
 And by command of Heav'n's all-powerful King
 I keep, by him forbidden to unlock

These

These Adamantine Gates ; against all force
 Death ready stands to interpose his dart,
 Fearless to be o'rmatcht by living wight.
 But what ow I to his commands above
 Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down
 Into this gloom of *Tartarus* profound,
 To sit in hateful Office here confin'd,
 Inhabitant of Heav'n, and heav'nlie-born,
 Here in perpetual agonie and pain,
 With terrors and with clamors compasst round
 Of mine own brood, that on my bowels feed :
 Thou art my Father, thou my Author, thou
 My being gav'st me ; whom should I obey
 But thee, whom follow ? thou wilt bring me soon
 To that new world of light and blifs, among
 The Gods who live at ease, where I shall Reign
 At thy right hand voluptuous, as befits
 Thy daughter and thy darling, without end.

Thus saying, from her side the fatal Key,
 Sad instrument of all our woe, she took ;
 And towards the Gate rouling her bestial train,
 Forthwith the huge Porcullis high up drew,
 Which but her self not all the *Strygian* powers
 Could once have mov'd ; then in the key-hole turns
 Th' intricate wards, and every Bolt and Bar
 Of massie Iron or sollid Rock with ease
 Unfast'ns : On a sudden op'n flie
 With impetuous recoile and jarring sound
 Th' infernal dores, and on thir hinges grate
 Harsh Thunder, that the lowest bottom shook
 Of *Erebus*. She op'nd, but to shut
 Excel'd her power ; the Gates wide op'n stood,
 That with extended wings a Bannerd Host
 Under spread Ensigns marching might pass through
 With Horse and Chariots ranke in loose array ;

So wide they stood, and like a Furnace mouth
 Cast forth redounding smoak and ruddy flame.
 Before thir eyes in sudden view appear
 The secrets of the hoarie deep, a dark
 Illimitable Ocean without bound,
 Without dimension, where length, breadth, & highth,
 And time and place are lost ; where eldest Night
 And *Chaos*, Ancestors of Nature, hold
 Eternal *Anarchie*, amidst the noise
 Of endless Warrs, and by confusion stand.
 For hot, cold, moist, and dry, four Champions fierce
 Strive here for Maistrick, and to Battel bring
 Thir embryon Atoms ; they around the flag
 Of each his Faction, in thir several Clanns,
 Light-arm'd or heavy, sharp, smooth, swift or slow,
 Swarm populous, unnumber'd as the Sands
 Of *Barca* or *Cyrene's* torrid soil,
 Levied to side with warring Winds, and poise
 Thir lighter wings. To whom these most adhere,
 Heerules a moment ; *Chaos* Umpire sits,
 And by decision more imbroiles the fray
 By which he Reigns : next him high Arbiter
Chance governs all. Into this wilde Abyss,
 The Womb of Nature and perhaps her Grave,
 Of neither Sea, nor Shore, nor Air, nor Fire,
 But all these in thir pregnant causes mixt
 Confus'dly, and which thus must ever fight,
 Unless th' Almighty Maker them ordain
 His dark materials to create more Worlds,
 Into this wild Abyss the warie fiend
 Stood on the brink of Hell and look'd a while,
 Pondering his Voyage ; for no narrow frith
 He had to cross. Nor was his care less peal'd
 With noises loud and ruinous (to compare
 Great things with small) then when *Bellona* storms

With

With all her battering Engines bent to raise
 Some Capital City ; or less then if this frame
 Of Heav'n were falling, and these Elements
 In mutinie had from her Axle torn
 The stedfast Earth. At last his Sail-broad Vannes
 He spreads for flight, and in the surging smoak
 Uplifted spurns the ground, thence many a League]
 As in a cloudy Chair ascending rides
 Audacious, but that seat soon failing, meets
 A vast vacuitie : all unawares
 Fluttring his pennons vain plumb down he drops
 Ten thousand fadom deep, and to this hour
 Down had been falling, had not by ill chance
 The strong rebuff of some tumultuous cloud
 Instinct with Fire and Nitre hurried him
 As many miles aloft : that furie stay'd,
 Quencht in a Boggie Syrtis, neither Sea,
 Nor good dry Land : nigh founderd on he fares,
 Treading the crude consistence, half on foot,
 Half flying ; behoves him now both Oare and Sale.
 As when a Gryfon through the Wilderness
 With winged course ore Hill or moarie Dale,
 Pursues the *Arimaspien*, who by stelth
 Had from his wakeful custody purloind
 The guarded Gold : So eagerly the fiend
 Ore bog or steep, through strait, rough, dense, or rare,
 With head, hands, wings or feet, pursues his way,
 And swims or sinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies :
 At length a universal hubbub wilde
 Of stunning sounds and voices all confus'd
 Born through the hollow dark assaults his eare
 With loudest vehemence : thither he plyes,
 Undaunted to meet there what ever power
 Or Spirit of the nethermost A byss
 Might in that noise reside, of-whom to ask

Which way the neereſt coaſt of darkneſs lyes
 Bordering on light; when ſtrait behold the Throne
 Of *Chaos*, and his dark Pavilion ſpread
 Wide on the waſteful Deep; with him Enthron'd
 Sat Sable-veſted *Night*, eldeſt of things,
 The Conſort of his Reign; and by them ſtood
Orcus and *Ades*, and the dreaded name
 Of *Demogorgon*; *Rumor* next and *Chance*,
 And *Tumult* and *Confuſion* all imbroil'd,
 And *Discord* with a thouſand various mouths.

T' whom *Satan* turning boldly, thus. Ye Powers
 And Spirits of this nethermoſt Abyſs,
Chaos and *ancient Night*, I come no Spy,
 With purpoſe to explore or to diſturb
 The ſecrets of your Realm, but by conſtraint
 Wandring this darkſom Deſart, as my way,
 Lies through your ſpacious Empire up to light,
 Alone, and without guide, half loſt, I ſeek
 What readieſt path leads where your gloomy bounds
 Conſine with Heav'n; or if ſom other place
 From your Dominion won, th' *Ethereal King*
 Poſſeſſes lately, thither to arrive
 I travel this profound, direct my courſe;
 Directed no mean recompence it brings
 To your behoof, if I that Region loſt,
 All uſurpation thence expell'd, reduce
 To her original darkneſs and your ſway
 (Which is my preſent journey) and once more
 Erect the Standard there of *ancient Night*;
 Yours be th' advantage all, mine the revenge.

Thus *Satan*; and him thus the Anarch old
 With faultring ſpeech and viſage incompoſ'd
 Answer'd. I know thee, ſtranger, who thou art,
 That mighty leading Angel, who of late
 Made head againſt Heav'n's King, though overthrow'n

I saw and heard, for such a numerous Host
 Fleed not in silence through the frighted deep
 With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout,
 Confusion worse confounded; and Heav'n Gates
 Poured out by millions her victorious Bands
 Pursuing. I upon my Frontieres here
 Keep residence; if all I can will serve,
 That little which is left so to defend,
 Enchroacht on still through our intestine broiles
 Weakning the Scepter of old *Night*: first Hell
 Your dungeon stretching far and wide beneath;
 Now lately Heaven and Earth, another World
 Hung ore my Realm, link'd in a golden Chain
 To that side Heav'n from whence your Legions fell:
 If that way be your walk, you have not farr;
 So much the neerer danger; go and speed;
 Havock and spoil and ruin are my gain.

He ceas'd; and *Satan* staid not to reply,
 But glad that now his Sea should find a shore,
 With fresh alacritie and force renew'd
 Springs upward like a Pyramid of fire
 Into the wilde expanse, and through the shock
 Of fighting Elements, on all sides round
 Environ'd wins his way; harder beset
 And more endanger'd, then when *Argo* pass'd
 Through *Bosporus* betwixt the justling Rocks:
 Or when *Ulysses* on the Larbord shunn'd
Charybdis, and by th' other whirlpool steard.
 So he with difficulty and labour hard
 Mov'd on, with difficulty and labour hee;
 But hee once past, soon after when men fell,
 Strange alteration! Sin and Death amain
 Following his track, such was the will of Heav'n,
 Pav'd after him a broad and beat'n way
 Over the dark Abyss, whose boiling Gulf

Tamely

Tamely endur'd a Bridge of wondrous length
 From Hell continu'd reaching th' utmost Orbe
 Of this frail World ; by which the Spirits perverse
 With easie intercourse pass to and fro
 To tempt or punish mortals, except whom
 God and good Angels guard by special grace.
 But now at last the sacred influence
 Of light appears, and from the walls of Heav'n
 Shoots farr into the bosom of dim Night
 A glimmering dawn ; here Nature first begins
 Her fardest verge, and *Chaos* to retire
 As from her outmost works a brok'n foe
 With tumult less and with less hostile din,
 That *Satan* with less toil, and now with ease
 Wafts on the calmer wave by dubious light
 And like a weather-beaten Vessel holds
 Gladly the Port, though Shrouds and Tackle torn ;
 Or in the emptier waste, resembling Air,
 Weighs his spread wings, at leasure to behold
 Farr off th' Empyreal Heav'n, extended wide
 In circuit, undetermin'd square or round,
 With Opal Towrs and Battlements adorn'd
 Of living Saphire, once his native Seat ;
 And fast by hanging in a golden Chain
 This pendant world, in bigness as a Starr
 Of smallest Magnitude, close by the Moon.
 Thither full fraught with mischievous revenge,
 Accurst, and in a cursed hour he hies.

The End of the Second Book.

Paradise

Paradise Lost.

BOOK III.

THE ARGUMENT.

God sitting on his Throne sees Satan flying towards this world then newly created; shews him to the Son who sat at his right hand; foretells the success of Satan in perverting mankind; clears his own Justice and Wisdom from all imputation, having created Man free and able enough to have withstood his Tempter; yet declares his purpose of grace towards him, in regard he fell not of his own malice, as did Satan, but by him seduc't. The Son of God renders praises to his Father for the manifestation of his gracious purpose towards Man; but God again declares, that Grace cannot be extended towards Man without the satisfaction of Divine Justice; Man hath offended the Majesty of God by aspiring to God-head, and therefore with all his Progeny devoted to death must dye, unless some one can be found sufficient to answer for his offence, and undergo his Punishment. The Son of God freely offers himself a Ransom for Man: the
Father

60 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK III.

Father accepts him, ordains his Incarnation, pronounces his exaltation above all Names in Heaven and Earth; commands all the Angels to adore him; they obey, and hymning to their Harps in full Quire, celebrate the Father and the Son. Mean while Satan alights upon the bare Convex of this Worlds outermost Orb; where wandring he first finds a place since call'd The Lymbo of Vanity; what persons and things fly up thither; thence comes to the Gate of Heaven, describ'd ascending by staires, and the waters above the Firmament that flow about it: His passage thence to the Orb of the Sun; he finds there Uriel the Regient of that Orb, but first changes himself into the shape of a meaner Angel; and pretending a zealous desire to behold the new Creation and Man whom God had plac't here, inquires of him the place of his habitation, and is directed; alights first on Mount Niphates.

Hail holy Light, ofspring of Heav'n first-born,
Or of th' Eternal Coeternal beam
May I expresse thee unblam'd? since God
(is light,

And never but in unapproach'd light
Dwelt from Eternity, dwelt then in thee,
Bright effluence of bright essence increate.
Or hear'st thou rather pure Ethereal stream,
Whose Fountain who shall tell? before the Sun,
Before the Heavens thou wert, and at the voice
Of God as with a Mantle didst invest
The rising world of waters dark and deep,
Won from the void and formless infinite.
Thee I re-visit now with bolder wing,
Escap't the Stygian Pool, though long detain'd

In

BOOK III. *Paradise Lost.* 61

In that obscure sojourn, while in my flight
Through utter and through middle darkness borne
With other notes then to th' *Orphean Lyre*
I sung of *Chaos* and *Eternal Night*,
Taught by th' heav'nly Muse to venture down
The dark descent, and up to re-ascend,
Though hard and rare : thee I re-visit safe,
And feel thy sovran vital Lamp ; but thou
Revisit'st not these eyes, that rowle in vain
To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn ;
So thick a drop serene hath quencht thir Orbes,
Or dim suffusion veild. Yet not the more
Cease I to wander where the Muses haunt
Cleer Spring, or shady Grove, or Sunnie Hill,
Smit with the love of sacred Song ; but chief
Thee *Sion* and the flowrie Brooks beneath
That wash thy hallowd feet, and warbling flow,
Nightly I visit : nor sometimes forget
Those other two equal'd with me in Fate,
So were I equal'd with them in renown,
Blind *Thamyris* and blind *Meonides*,
And *Tiresias* and *Phineus* Prophets old.
Then feed on thoughts, that voluntarie move
Harmonious numbers ; as the wakeful Bird
Sings darkling, and in shadiest Covert hid
Tunes her nocturnal Note. Thus with the Year
Seasons return, but not to me returns
Day, or the sweet approach of Ev'n or Morn,
Or sight of vernal bloom, or Summers Rose,
Or flocks, or heards, or human face divine ;
But cloud in stead, and ever-during dark
Surrounds me, from the chearful wayes of men
Cut off, and for the Book of knowledg fair
Presented with a Univerfal blanc

Of Natures works to me expung'd and ras'd,
And wisdom at one entrance quite shut out.
So much the rather thou Celestial light
Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers
Irradiate, there plant eyes, all mist from thence
Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell
Of things invisible to mortal sight.

Now had the Almighty Father from above,
From the pure Empyrean where he sits
High Thron'd above all highth, bent down his eye,
His own works and their works at once to view:
About him all the Sanctities of Heaven
Stood thick as Starrs, and from his sight receiv'd
Beatitude past utterance; on his right
The radiant image of his Glory sat,
His onely Son; On Earth he first beheld
Our two first Parents, yet the onely two
Of mankind, in the happie Garden plac'd,
Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,
Uninterrupted joy, unrivald love
In blisful solitude; he then survey'd
Hell and the Gulf between, and *Satan* there
Coasting the wall of Heav'n on this side Night
In the dun Air sublime, and ready now
To stoop with wearied wings, and willing feet
On the bare outside of this World, that seem'd
Firm land imbosom'd without Firmament,
Uncertain which, in Ocean or in Air.
Him God beholding from his prospect high,
Wherein past, present, future he beholds,
Thus to his onely Son foreseeing spake.

Onely begotten Son, seest thou what rage
Transports our adversarie, whom no bounds
Prescrib'd, no barrs of Hell, nor all the chains

Heart

Heapt on him there, nor yet the main Abyſs
Wide interrupt can hold ; ſo bent he ſeems
On deſperate reveng. that ſhall redound
Upon his own rebellious head. And now
Through all reſtraint broke looſe he wings his way
Not farr off Heav'n, in the Precincts of light,
Directly towards the new created World,
And Man there plac't, with purpoſe to aſſay
If him by force he can deſtroy, or worſe,
By ſome falſe guile pervert ; and ſhall pervert,
For man will heark'n to his glozing lyes,
And eaſily tranſgreſs the ſole Command,
Sole pledge of his obedience : So will fall,
Hee and his faithleſs Progenie : whoſe fault ?
Whoſe but his own ? ingrate, he had of mee
All he could have ; I made him juſt and right,
Sufficient to have ſtood, though free to fall.
Such I created all th' Ethereal Powers
And Spirits, both them who ſtood and them who faild ;
Freely they ſtood who ſtood, and fell who fell.
Not free, what proof could they have giv'n ſincere
Of true allegiance, conſtant Faith or Love,
Where onely what they needs muſt do, appear'd,
Not what they would ? what praiſe could they re-
What pleaſure I from ſuch obedience paid. (ceive ?
When Will and Reaſon (Reaſon alſo is choiſe)
Uſeleſs and vain, of freedom both deſpoild,
Made paſſive both, had ſerv'd neceſſitie,
Not mee. They therefore as to right belongd,
So were created, nor can juſtly accuſe
Thir maker, or thir making, or thir Fate,
As if predeſtination over-rul'd
Thir will, diſpos'd by abſolute Decree
Or high foreknowledg ; they themſelves decreed
Thir

64 **Paradise Lost.** BOOK III.

Thir own revolt, not I ; if I foreknew,
 Foreknowledg had no influence on their fault,
 Which had no less prov'd certain unforeknown.
 So without least impulse or shadow of Fate,
 Or aught by me immutablie foreseen,
 They trespass, Authors to themselves in all
 Both what they judge and what they chose ; for so
 I form'd them free, and free they must remain,
 Till they enthrall themselves : I else must change
 Thir nature, and revoke the high Decree
 Unchangeable, Eternal, which ordain'd
 Thir freedom, they themselves ordain'd thir fall,
 The first sort by their own suggestion fell,
 Self-tempted, self-deprav'd : Man falls deceiv'd
 By the other first ; Man therefore shall find grace,
 The other none : in Mercy and Justice both,
 Through Heav'n and Earth, so shall my glorie excel,
 But Mercy first and last shall brightest shine.

Thus while God spake, ambrosial fragrance fill'd
 All Heav'n, and in the blessed Spirits elect
 Sense of new joy ineffable diffus'd :
 Beyond compare the Son of God was seen
 Most glorious, in him all his Father shon
 Substantially express'd, and in his face
 Divine compassion visibly appeerd,
 Love without end, and without measure Grace,
 Which uttering thus he to his Father spake.

O Father, gracious was that word which clos'd
 Thy sovran sentence, that Man should find grace ;
 For which both Heav'n and Earth shall high extoll
 Thy praises, with th' innumerable sound
 Of Hymns and sacred Songs, wherewith thy Throne
 Encompas'd shall resound thee ever blest.
 For should Man finally be lost, should Man

Thy

Thy creature late so lov'd, thy youngest Son
Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though joynd
With his own folly? that be from thee farr,
That farr be from thee, Father, who art Judg
Of all things made, and judgest onely right.

Or shall the Adversarie thus obtain
His end, and frustrate thine, shall he fulfill
His malice, and thy goodness bring to naught,
Or proud return though to his heavier doom,
Yet with revenge accomplish't, and to Hell
Draw after him the whole Race of mankind,
By him corrupted? or wilt thou thy self
Abolish thy Creation, and unmake,
For him, what for thy glorie thou hast made?
So should thy goodness and thy greatness both
Be questiond and blasphem'd without defence.

To whom the great Creatour thus reply'd.
O Son, in whom my Soul hath chief delight,
Son of my bosom, Son who art alone
My Word, my Wisdom, and effectual Might,
All hast thou spok'n as my thoughts are; all
As my Eternal purpose hath decreed:
Man shall not quite be lost, but sav'd who will,
Yet not of will in him, but grace in me
Freely vourst; once more I will renew
His lapsed powers, though forfeit and enthrall'd
By sin to foul exorbitant desires;
Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand
On even ground against his mortal foe,
By me upheld, that he may know how frail
His fall'n condition is, and to me ow
All his deliverance, and to none but me.
Some I have chosen of peculiar grace
Elect above the rest; so is my will:

E

The

The rest shall hear me call, and oft be warnd
Thir sinful state, and to appease betimes
Th' incens'd Deitie, while offerd grace
Invites: for I will cleer thir senses dark,
What may suffice, and soft'n stonie hearts
To pray, repent, and bring obedience due.
To Prayer, repentance, and obedience due,
Though but endevord with sincere intent,
Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut.
And I will place within them as a guide
My Umpire *Conscience*, whom if they will hear,
Light after light well us'd they shall attain,
And to the end persisting, safe arrive.
This my long sufferance and my day of grace
They who neglect and scorn, shall never taste;
But hard be hard'nd, blind be blinded more,
That they may stumble on, and deeper fall;
And none but such from mercy I exclude.
But yet all is not don; Man disobeying,
Disloyal breaks his fealtie, and sinns
Against the high Supremacie of Heav'n,
Affecting God-head, and so loosing all,
To expiate his Treason hath naught left,
But to destruction sacred and devote,
He with his whole posteritie must dye,
Dye hee or Justice must; unless for him
Som other able, and as willing, pay,
The rigid satisfaction, death for death.
Say Heav'nly powers, where shall we find such love,
Which of ye will be mortal to redeem
Mans mortal crime, and just th' unjust to save,
Dwells in all Heaven charitie so deare?
He ask'd, but all the Heav'nly Quire stood mute,
And silence was in Heav'n: on mans behalf

Patron

Patron or Intercessor none appeerd,
 Much less that durst upon his own head draw
 The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set.
 And now without redemption all mankind
 Must have bin lost, adjudg'd to Death and Hell
 By doom severe, had not the Son of God,
 In whom the fulness dwels of love divine,
 His dearest mediation thus renewd.

Father, thy word is past, man shall find grace ;
 And shall grace not find means, that finds her way,
 The speediest of thy winged messengers,
 To visit all thy creatures, and to all
 Comes unprevented, unimplor'd, unsought;
 Happie for man, so coming ; he her aide
 Can never seek, once dead in sins and lost ;
 Attonement for himself or offering meet,
 Indebted and undon, hath none to bring :
 Behold mee then, mee for him, life for life
 I offer, on mee let thine anger fall ;
 Account mee man ; I for his sake will leave
 Thy bosom, and this glorie next to thee
 Freely put off, and for him lastly dye
 Well pleas'd, on me let Death wreck all his rage ;
 Under his gloomie power I shall not long
 Lie vanquisht : thou hast givn me to possess
 Life in my self for ever, by thee I live,
 Though now to Death I yield, and am his due
 All that of me can die, yet that debt paid,
 Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsome grave
 His prey, nor suffer my unspotted Soule
 For ever with corruption there to dwell ;
 But I shall rise Victorious, and subdue
 My vaunquisher, spoild of his vanted spoile ;
 Death is deaths wound shall then receive, and stoop
 Inglorious, of his mortall sting disarm'd.

I through the ample Air in Triumph high
 Shall lead Hell Captive maugre Hell, and show
 The powers of darkness bound. Thou at the sight
 Pleas'd, out of Heaven shalt look down and smile,
 While by thee rais'd I ruin all my Foes,
 Death last, and with his Carcass glut the Grave :
 Then with the multitude of my redeem'd
 Shall enter Heaven long absent, and returne,
 Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud
 Of anger shall remain, but peace assur'd,
 And reconcilment ; wrauth shall be no more
 Thenceforth, but in thy presence Joy entire.

His words here ended, but his meek aspect
 Silent yet spake, and breath'd immortal love
 To mortal men, above which only shon
 Filial obedience : as a sacrifice
 Glad to be offer'd, he attends the will
 Of his great Father. Admiration seiz'd
 All Heav'n, what this might mean, or whither tend
 Wondring ; but soon th' Almighty thus reply'd :

O thou in Heav'n and Earth the only peace
 Found out for mankind under wrauth, O thou
 My sole complacence ! well thou know'st how dear
 To me are all my works, nor Man the least
 Though last created, that for him I spare
 Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,
 By loosing thee a while, the whole Race lost.
 Thou therefore whom thou only canst redeem,
 Thir Nature also to thy Nature joyn ;
 And be thy self Man-among men on Earth,
 Made flesh, when time shall be, of Virgin seed,
 By wondrous birth : Be thou in *Adams* room
 The Head of all mankind, though *Adams* Son.
 As in him perish all men, so in thee

As from a second root shall be restor'd,
 As many as are restor'd, without thee none.
 His crime makes guiltie all his Sons, thy merit
 Imputed shall absolve them who renounce
 Thir own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,
 And live in thee transplanted, and from thee
 Receive new life. So Man, as is most just,
 Shall satisfie for Man, be judg'd and die,
 And dying rise, and rising with him raise
 His Brethren, ransomd with his own dear life.
 So Heav'nly love shall outdoo Hellish hate
 Giving to death, and dying to redeeme,
 So dearly to redcem what Hellish hate
 So easily destroy'd, and still destroyes
 In those who, when they may, accept not grace.
 Nor shalt thou by descending to assume
 Mans Nature, less'n or degrade thine own.
 Because thou hast, though Thron'd in highest bliss
 Equal to God, and equally enjoying
 God-like fruition, quitted all to save
 A World from utter loss, and hast been found
 By Merit more then Birthright Son of God,
 Found worthiest to be so by being Good,
 Farr more then Great or High; because in thee
 Love hath abounded more then Glory abounds,
 Therefore thy Humiliation shall exalt
 With thee thy Manhood also to this Throne,
 Here shalt thou sit incarnate, here shalt Reign
 Both God and Man, Son both of God and Man,
 Anointed universal King, all Power
 I give thee, reign for ever, and assume
 Thy Merits; under thee as Head Supream
 Thrones, Princedoms, Powers, Dominions I reduce:
 All knees to thee shall bow, of them that bide

In Heav'n, or Earth, or under Earth in Hell;
When thou attended gloriously from Heav'n
Shalt in the Sky appeer, and from thee send
The summoning Arch-Angels to proclaime
Thy dread Tribunal: forthwith from all windes
The living, and forthwith the cited dead
Of all past Ages to the general Doom
Shall hast'n, such a peal shall rouse thir sleep.
Then all thy Saints assembl'd, thou shalt judge
Bad men and Angels, they arraigned shall sink
Beneath thy Sentence; Hell her numbers full.
Thenceforth shall be for ever shut. Mean while
The World shall burn, and from her ashes spring
New Heav'n and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell,
And after all thir tribulations long
See golden days, fruitful of golden deeds,
With Joy and Love triumphing, and fair Truth.
Then thou thy Regal Scepter shalt lay by,
For Regal Scepter then no more shall need,
God shall be All in All. But all ye Gods,
Adore him, who to compass all this dies,
Adore the Son, and honour him as mee.

No sooner had th' Almighty ceas't, but all
The multitude of Angels with a shout
Loud as from numbers without number, sweet
As from blest voices, uttering joy, Heav'n rung
With Jubilee, and loud Hosanna's filld
Th' eternal Regions: lowly reverent
Towards either Throne they bow, and to the ground
With solemn adoration down they cast
Thir Crowns inwove with Amarant and Gold,
Immortal Amarant, a Flour which once
In Paradise, fast by the Tree of Life
Began to bloom, but soon for mans offence

To Heav'n remov'd where first it grew, there grows,
 And flours aloft shading the Fount of Life,
 And where the river of Bliss through midst of Heav'n
 Rowls o're *Elisian* Flours her Amber stream;
 With these that never fade the Spirits elect
 Bind thir resplendent locks inwreath'd with beams,
 Now in loose Garlands thick thrown off, the bright
 Pavement that like a Sea of Jasper shon
 Impurpl'd with Celestial Roses smil'd.

Then Crown'd again thir gold'n Harps they took,
 Harps ever tun'd, that glittering by thir side
 Like Quivers hung, and with Preamble sweet
 Of charming symphonie they introduce
 Thir sacred Song, and waken raptures high;
 No voice exempt, no voice but well could joine
 Melodious part, such concord is in Heav'n.

Thee Father first they sung Omnipotent,
 Immutable, Immortal, Infinite,
 Eternal King; thee Author of all being,
 Fountain of light, thy self invisible
 Amidst the glorious brightness where thou sit'st
 Thron'd inaccessible, but when thou shad'st
 The full blaze of thy beams, and through a cloud
 Drawn round about thee like a radiant Shrine,
 Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appeer,
 Yet dazle Heav'n, that brightest Seraphim
 Approach not, but with both wings veil thir eyes.
 Thee next they sang of all Creation first,
 Begotten Son, Divine Similitude,
 In whose conspicuous count'nance, without cloud
 Made visible, th' Almighty Father shines,
 Whom else no Creature can behold; on thee
 Imprest the effulgence of his Glorie abides,
 Transfus'd on thee his ample Spirit rests.

Hee Heav'n of Heavens and all the Powers therein
 By thee created, and by thee threw down
 Th' aspiring Dominations : thou that day
 Thy Fathers dreadful Thunder didst not spare,
 Nor stop thy flaming Chariot wheels, that shook
 Heav'ns everlasting Frame, while o're the necks
 Thou drov'st of warring Angels disarraid.
 Back from pursuit thy Powers with loud acclaime
 Thee only extoll'd, Son of thy Fathers might,
 To execute fierce vengeance on his foes,
 Not so on Man ; him through their malice fall'n,
 Father of Mercie and Grace, thou didst not doome
 So strictly, but much more to pitie encline :
 No sooner did thy dear and onely Son
 Perceive thee purpos'd not to doom frail Man
 So strictly, but much more to pitie enclin'd,
 He to appease thy wrath, and end the strife
 Of Mercy and Justice in thy face discern'd,
 Regardless of the Bliss wherein hee sat
 Second to thee, offerd himself to die
 For mans offence. O unexampl'd love,
 Love no where to be found less then Divine !
 Hail Son of God, Saviour of Men, thy Name
 Shall be the copious matter of my Song
 Henceforth, and never shall my Harp thy praise
 Forget, nor from thy Fathers praise disjoine.

Thus they in Heav'n, above the starry Sphear,
 Thir happie hours in joy and hymning spent.
 Mean while upon the firm opacous Globe
 Of this round World, whose first convex divides
 The luminous inferior Orbs, enclos'd
 From *Chaos* and th' inroad of Darkness old,
Satan alighted walks : a Globe farr off
 It seem'd, now seems a boundless Continent

Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of Night
Starless expos'd, and ever-threatening storms
Of *Chaos* blustering round, inclement skie,
Save on that side which from the wall of Heav'n
Though distant farr som small reflection gains
Of glimmering air less vext with tempest loud:
Here walk'd the Fiend at large in spacious field.
As when a Vultur on *Imaus* bred,
Whose snowie ridge the roving *Tartar* bounds,
Dislodging from a Region scarce of prey
To gorge the flesh of Lambs or yeanling Kids
On Hills where Flocks are fed, flies toward the Springs
Of *Ganges* or *Hydaspes*, *Indian* streams;
But in his way lights on the barren Plaines
Of *Sericana*, where *Chineses* drive
With Sails and Wind thir Canie Waggon light:
So on this windie Sea of Land, the Fiend
Walk'd up and down alone bent on his prey,
Alone for other Creature in this place
Living or liveless to be found was none,
None yet, but store hereafter from the Earth
Up hither like Aereal vapours flew
Of all things transitory and vain, when Sin
With vanity had filld the works of men:
Both all things vain, and all who in vain things
Built thir fond hopes of Glorie or lasting fame,
Or happiness in this or th' other life;
All who have thir reward on Earth, the fruits
Of painful Superstition and blind Zeal,
Naught seeking but the praise of men, here find
Fit retribution, emptie as thir deeds;
All th' unaccomplisht works of Natures hand,
Abortive, monstrous, or unkindly mixt,
Dissolv'd on Earth, & yet hither, and in vain,

Till

Till final dissolution, wander here,
Not in the neighbouring Moon, as some have dreamd;
Those argent Fields more likely habitants,
Translated Saints, or middle Spirits hold
Betwixt th' Angelical and Human kind:
Hither of ill-joynd Sons and Daughters born
First from the ancient World those Giants came
With many a vain exploit, though then renownd:
The builders next of *Babel* on the Plain
Of *Sennaar*, and still with vain designe
New *Babels*, had they wherewithall, would build:
Others came single; he who to be deemd
A God, lepd fondly into *Aetna* flames,
Empedocles, and he who to enjoy
Plato's Elysium, leap'd into the Sea,
Cleombrotus, and many more too long,
Embryo's and Idiots, Eremites, and Friers
White, Black and Grey, with all their trumperie.
Here Pilgrims roam, that stray'd so farr to seek
In *Golgotha* him dead, who lives in Heav'n;
And they who to be sure of Paradise
Dying put on the weeds of *Dominic*,
Or in *Franciscan* think to pass disguis'd;
They pass the Planets seven, and pass the fixt,
And that ChrySTALLINE Sphear whose ballance weighs
The Trepidation talkt, and that first mov'd;
And now Saint *Peter* at Heav'n's Wicket seems
To wait them with his Keys, and now at foot
Of Heav'n's ascent they lift thir Feet, when loe
A violent cross wind from either Coast
Blows them transverse ten thousand Leagues awry
Into the devious Air; then might ye see
Cowles, Hoods and Habits with thir wearers tost
And flutter'd into Raggs, then Reliques, Beads,

In-

Indulgences, Dispenses, Pardons, Bulls,
 The sport of Winds: all these upwhirl'd aloft
 Fly o're the backside of the World farr off
 Into a *Limbo* large and broad, since call'd
 The Paradise of Fools, to few unknown
 Long after, now unpeopl'd, and untrod;
 All this dark Globe the Fiend found as he pass'd,
 And long he wanderd, till at last a gleame
 Of dawning light turn'd thither-ward in haste
 His travell'd steps; far distant he descries
 Ascending by degrees magnificent
 Up to the wall of Heaven a structure high,
 At top whereof, but farr more rich appeerd
 The work as of a Kingly Palace Gate
 With Frontispiece of Diamond and Gold
 Imbellisht, thick with sparkling orient Gemmes
 The Portal shon, inimitable on Earth
 By Model, or by shading Pencil drawn.
 The Stairs were such as whereon *Jacob* saw
 Angels ascending and descending, bands
 Of Guardians bright, when he from *Esau* fled
 To *Padan-Aram* in the field of *Luz*,
 Dreaming by night under the open Skie,
 And waking cri'd, *This is the Gate of Heav'n*:
 Each Stair mysteriously was meant, nor stood
 There alwayes, but drawn up to Heav'n sometimes
 Viewless, and underneath a bright Sea flow'd
 Of Jasper, or of liquid Pearle, whereon
 Who after came from Earth, sayling arriv'd,
 Wasted by Angels, or flew o're the Lake
 Rapt in a Chariot drawn by fiery Steeds.
 The Stairs were then let down, whether to dare
 The Fiend by easie ascent, or aggravate
 His sad exclusion from the dores of Bliss.

Direct

Direct against which op'nd from beneath,
 Just o're the blisful seat of Paradise,
 A passage down to th' Earth, a passage wide,
 Wider by farr then that of after-times
 Over Mount *Sion*, and, though that were large,
 Over the promis'd Land to God so dear,
 By which, to visit oft those happy Tribes,
 On high behests his Angels to and fro
 Pass'd frequent, and his eye with choice regard
 From *Paneas* the fount of *Jordans* flood
 To *Beerfaba*, where the *Holy Land*
 Borders on *Egypt* and the *Arabian* shoare;
 So wide the op'ning seemd, where bounds were set
 To darkness, such as bound the Ocean wave.
 Satan from hence now on the lower stair
 That scal'd by steps of Gold to Heav'n Gate
 Looks down with wonder at the sudden view
 Of all this World at once. As when a Scout
 Through dark and desert wayes with peril gone
 All night; at last by break of chearful dawne
 Obtains the brow of some high-climbing Hill,
 Which to his eye discovers unaware
 The goodly prospect of some forcin land
 First-seen, or some renown'd Metropolis
 With glistering Spires and Pinnacles adorn'd,
 Which now the Rising Sun guilds with his beams.
 Such wonder seis'd, though after Heaven seen,
 The Spirit maligne, but much more envy seis'd
 At sight of all this World beheld so faire.
 Round he surveys, and well might, where he stood
 So high above the circling Canopic
 Of Nights extended shade; from Eastern Point
 Of *Libra* to the fleecie Starr that bears
Andromeda farr off *Atlantic* Seas.

Beyond

BOOK III. *Paradise Lost.* 77

Beyond the *Horizon*; then from Pole to Pole
 Heviews in bredth, and without longer pause
 Down right into the Worlds first Region throws
 His flight precipitant, and winds with ease
 Through the pure marble Air his oblique way
 Amongst innumerable Starrs, that shon
 Starrs distant, but nigh hand seemd other Worlds;
 Or other Worlds they seemd, or happy Iles,
 Like those *Hesperian* Gardens sam'd of old,
 Fortunate Fields, and Groves and flourie Vales,
 Thrice happy Iles, but who dwelt happy there
 He stayd not to enquire: above them all
 The golden Sun in splendor likest Heaven
 Allur'd his eye: Thither his course he bends
 Through the calm Firmament; but up or down
 By center, or eccentric, hard to tell,
 Or Longitude, where the great Luminarie
 Alooff the vulgar Constellations thick,
 That from his Lordly eye keep distance due,
 Dispenses Light from far; they as they move
 Thir Starry dance in numbers that compute
 Days, months, & years, towards his all-chearing Lamp
 Turn swift thir various motions, or are turnd
 By his Magnetic beam, that gently warms
 The Univers, and to each inward part
 With gentle penetration, though unseen,
 Shoots invisable vertue even to the deep
 So wondrously was set his Station bright.
 There lands the Fiend, a spot like which perhaps
 Astronomer in the Sun's lucent Orbe
 Through his glaz'd Optic Tube yet never saw.
 The place he found beyond expression bright,
 Compar'd with aught on Earth, Medal or Stone;
 Not all parts like, but all alike informd

With

With radiant light, as glowing Iron with fire ;
If mettall, part seemd Gold, part Silver cleer ;
If stone, Carbuncle most or Chrysolite,
Rubic or Topaz, to the Twelve that shon
In *Aarons* Brest-plate, and a stone besides
Imagind rather oft then elsewhere seen,
That stone, or like to that which here below
Philosophers in vain so long have sought,
In vain, though by thir powerful Art they binde
Volatil Hermes, and call up unbound
In various shapes old *Proteus* from the Sea
Draind through a Limbeck to his Native forme.
What wonder then if Fields and Regions here
Breathe forth *Elixir* pure, and Rivers run
Potable Gold, when with one vertuous touch
Th' Arch-Chimic Sun so farr from us remote
Produces with Terrestrial Humor mixt
Here in the dark so many precious things
Of colour glorious and effect so rare ?
Here matter new to gaze the Devil met
Undazl'd, farr and wide his eye commands,
For sight no obstacle found here, nor shade,
But all Sun-shine, as when his Beams at Noon
Culminate from th' *Equator*, as they now
Shot upward still direct, whence no way round
Shadow from body opaque can fall, and the Aire,
No where so cleer, sharp'nd his visual ray
To objects distant farr, whereby he soon
Saw within kenn a glorious Angel stand,
The same whom *John* saw also in the Sun :
His back was turnd, but not his brightness hid ?
Of beaming sunnie Raies, a golden tiar
Circl'd his Head, nor less his Locks behind
Illustrious on his Shoulders sledge with wings

Lay waving round; on som great charge imployd
He seemd, or fixt in cogitation deep.

Glad was the Spirit impure as now in hope
To find who might direct his wandring flight
To Paradise the happie seat of Man,
His journies end and our beginning woe.

But first he casts to change his proper shape
Which else might work him danger or delay:

And now a stripling Cherube he appears,
Not of the prime, yet such as in his face

Youth smil'd Celestial, and to every Limb
Sutable grace diffus'd, so well he feign'd;

Under a Coronet his flowing haire

Incurles on either cheek plaid, wings he wore

Of many a colourd plume sprinkl'd with Gold,

His habit fit for speed succinct, and held

Before his decent steps a Silver wand.

He drew not nigh unheard, the Angel bright,

Ere he drew nigh, his radiant visage turn'd,

Admonisht by his ear, and strait was known

Th' Arch-Angel *Uriel*, one of the seav'n

Who in Gods presence, neereſt to his Throne

Stand ready at command, and are his Eyes

That run through all the Heav'ns, or down to th' Earth

Bear his swift errands over moist and dry,

O're Sea and Land: him *Satan* thus accostes;

Uriel, for thou of those seav'n Spirits that stand

In sight of God's high Throne, gloriously bright,

The first art wont his great authentic will

Interpreter through highest Heav'n to bring,

Where all his Sons thy Embassie attend;

And here art likeliest by supream decree

Like honour to obtain, and as his Eye

To visit oft this new Creation round;

80 **Paradise Lost.** BOOK III

Unspeakable desire to see, and know
 All these his wondrous works, but chiefly Man
 His chief delight and favour, him for whom
 All these his works so wondrous he ordaind,
 Hath brought me from the Quires of Cherubim
 Alone thus wandring. Brightest Seraph tell
 In which of all these shining Orbes hath Man
 His fixed seat, or fixed seat hath none,
 But all these shining Orbes his choice to dwell ;
 That I may find him, and with secret gaze,
 Or open admiration him behold
 On whom the great Creator hath bestowd
 Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces powrd ;
 That both in him and all things, as is meet,
 The Universal Maker we may praise ;
 Who justly hath drivn out his Rebel Foes
 To deepest Hell, and to repair that loss
 Created this new happie Race of Men
 To serve him better : wise are all his wayes.

So spake the false dissembler unperceivd ;
 For neither Man nor Angel can discern
 Hypocrisie, the onely evil that walks
 Invisible, except to God alone,
 By his permissive will, through Heav'n and Earth :
 And oft though wisdom wake, suspicion sleeps
 At wisdoms Gate, and to simplicitie
 Relinquishes her charge, while goodness thinks no ill
 Where no ill seems : Which now for once beguiled
 Uriel, though Regent of the Sun, and held
 The sharpest sighted Spirit of all in Heav'n ;
 Who to the fraudulent Impostor soule
 In his uprightness answer thus returnd.
 Fair Angel, thy desire which tends to know
 The works of God, thereby to glorifie

BOOK III. *Paradise Lost.* 83

The great Work-Maister, leads to no excess
 That reaches blame, but rather merits praise
 The more it seems excess that led thee hither
 From thy Empyrean Mansion thus alone,
 To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps
 Contented with report hear onely in heav'n;
 For wonderful indeed are all his works,
 Pleasant to know, and worthiest to be all
 Had in remembrance alwayes with delight;
 But what created mind can comprehend
 Thir number, or the wisdom infinite
 That brought them forth, but hid thir causes deep.
 I saw when at his word the formless Mass,
 This worlds material mould, came to a heap :
Confusion heard his voice, and wilde uproar
 Stood rul'd, stood vast infinitude confin'd;
 Till at his second bidding darkness fled,
 Light shon, and order from disorder sprung :
 Swift to thir several Quarters hasted then
 The cumbrous Elements, Earth, Flood, Aire, Fire,
 And this Ethereal quintessence of Heav'n
 Flew upward, spirited with various forms,
 That rowld orbicular, and turnd to Starrs
 Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move ;
 Each had his place appointed, each his course,
 The rest in circuit walles this Universe.
 Look downward on that Globe whose hither side
 With light from hence, though but reflected, shines ;
 That place is Earth the seat of Man, that light
 His day, which else as th' other Hemisphere
 Night would invade, but there the neighbouring Moon
 (So call that opposite fair Starr) her aide
 Timely interposes, and her monthly round
 Still ending, still renewing, through mid Heav'n ;

G

With

82 *Paradise Lost.* Book III.

With borrowd light her countenance triform
Hence fills and empties to enlighten th' Earth,
And in her pale dominion checks the night,
That spot to which I point is *Paradise*,
Adams abode, those lostie shades his Bowre.
Thy way thou canst not miss, me mine requires.

Thus said, he turnd, and *Satan* bowing low,
As to superior Spirits is wont in Heaven,
Where honour due and reverence none neglects,
Took leave, and toward the coast of Earth beneath,
Down from th' Ecliptic, sped with hop'd success,
Throws his steep flight in many an Aerie weele,
Nor staid, till on *Niphates* top he lights.

The End of the Third Book.

Paradise

Paradise Lost.

BOOK IV.

THE ARGUMENT.

Satan now in prospect of Eden, and nigh the place where he must now attempt the bold enterprize which he undertook alone against God and Man, falls into many doubts with himself, and many passions, fear, envy, and despare; but at length confirms himself in evil, journeys on to Paradise, whose outward prospect and situation is described, overleaps the bounds, sits in the shape of a Cormorant on the Tree of life, as highest in the Garden to look about him. The Garden describ'd; Satans first sight of Adam and Eve; his wonder at thir excellent form and happy state, but with resolution to work thir fall; overhears thir discourse, thence gathers that the Tree of knowledge was forbidden them to eat of, under penalty of death; and thereon intends to found his Temptation; by seducing them to transgress; then leaves them a while, to know further of thir state by some other means. Mean while Uriel descending on a Sun-beam warns Gabriel, who had in charge the Gate of Paradise,

84 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK IV.

dise, that some evil spirit had escap'd the Deep, and
 past at Noon by his Sphere in the shape of a good An-
 gel down to Paradise, discovered after by his furious
 gestures in the Mount. Gabriel promises to find him
 ere morning. Night coming on, Adam and Eve,
 discourse of going to thir rest: thir Bower describ'd;
 thir Evening worship. Gabriel drawing forth his
 Bands of night-watch to walk the round of Paradise,
 appoints two strong Angels to Adams Bower, lest
 the evill spirit should be there doing some harm to
 Adam or Eve sleeping; there they find him at the
 ear of Eve, tempting her in a dream, and bring him,
 though unwilling, to Gabriel; by whom question'd,
 he scornfully answers, prepares resistance, but hinder'd
 by a Sign from Heaven, flies out of Paradise.

O For that warning voice, which he who saw
 Th' *Apocalyps*, heard cry in Heaven aloud,
 Then when the Dragon, put to second rout,
 Came furious down to be reveng'd on men,
 Wo to the inhabitants on Earth! that now,
 While time was, our first-Parents had bin warn'd
 The coming of thir secret foe, and scap'd
 Haply so scap'd his mortal snare; for now
Satan, now first inflam'd with rage, came down
 The Tempter ere th' Accuser of man-kind,
 To wreck on innocent frail man his loss
 Of that first Battel, and his flight to Hell:
 Yet not rejoycing in his speed, though bold,
 Far off and fearless, nor with cause to boast,
 Begins his dire attempt, which nigh the birth
 Now rowling, boiles in his tumultuous brest,
 And like a devillish Engine back recoiles
 Upon himself; horror and doubt distract

His

BOOK IV. *Paradise Lost.* 85

His troubl'd thoughts, and from the bottom stir
The Hell within him, for within him Hell
He brings, and round about him, nor from Hell
One step no more then from himself can fly
By change of place : Now conscience wakes despair
That slumberd, wakes the bitter memorie
Of what he was, what is, and what must be
Worse ; of worse deeds worse sufferings must insue.
Sometimes towards *Eden* which now in his view
Lay pleasant, his grievd look he fixes sad,
Sometimes towards Heav'n and the full-blazing Sun,
Which now sat high in his Meridian Towre :
Then much revolving, thus in sighs began.

O thou that with surpassing Glory crown'd,
Look'st from thy sole Dominion like the God
Of this new World ; at whose sight all the Starrs
Hide thir diminisht heads ; to thee I call,
But with no friendly voice, and add thy name
O Sun, to tell thee how I hate thy beams
That bring to my remembrance from what state
I fell, how glorious once above thy Spheare ;
Till Pride and worse Ambition threw me down
Warring in Heav'n against Heav'ns matchless King :
Ah wherefore ! he deservd no such return
From me, whom he created what I was
In that bright eminence, and with his good
Upbraided none ; nor was his service hard.
What could be less then to afford him praise,
The easiest recompence, and pay him thanks,
How due ! yet all his good prov'd ill in me,
And wrought but malice ; lifted up so high
I'deind subjection, and thought one step higher
Would set me highest, and in a moment quit
The debt immense of endless gratitude,

So burthenome still paying, still to ow;
 Forgetful what from him I still received,
 And understood not that a grateful mind
 By owing owes not, but still pays, at once
 Indebted and discharg'd; what burden then?
 O had his powerful Destiny ordain'd
 Me some inferiour Angel, I had stood
 Then happie; no unbounded hope had rais'd
 Ambition. Yet why not? som other Power
 As great might have aspir'd, and me though mean
 Drawn to his part; but other Powers as great
 Fell not, but stand unshak'n, from within
 Or from without, to all temptations arm'd.
 Hadst thou the same free Will and Power to stand?
 Thou hadst: whom hast thou then or what to accuse,
 But Heav'n's free Love dealt equally to all?
 Be then his Love accurst, since love or hate,
 To me alike, it deals eternal woe.
 Nay curs'd be thou; since against his thy will
 Chose freely what it now so justly rues.
 Me miserable! which way shall I flie
 Infinite wrath, and infinite despair?
 Which way I flie is Hell; my self am Hell;
 And in the lowest deep a lower deep
 Still threatening to devour me opens wide,
 To which the Hell I suffer seems a Heav'n.
 O then at last relent: is there no place
 Left for Repentance, none for Pardon left?
 None left but by submission; and that word
Disdain forbids me, and my dread of shame
 Among the spirits beneath, whom I seduc'd
 With other promises and other vaunts
 Then to submit, boasting I could subdue
 Th' Omnipotent. Ay me, they little know

Book IV. *Paradise Lost.* 87

How dearly I abide that boast so vaine,
Under what torments inwardly I groane;
While they adore me on the Throne of Hell,
With Diadem and Scepter high advanc'd
The lower still I fall, onely Supream
In miserie; such joy Ambition findes.
But say I could repent and could obtaine
By Act of Grace my former state; how soon
Would high recal high thoughts, how soon unsay
What feign'd submission swore: ease would recant
Vows made in pain, as violent and void.
For never can true reconcilment grow
Where wounds of deadly hate have peirc'd so deep
Which would but lead me to a worse relapse
And heavier fall: so should I purchase deare
Short intermission bought with double smart.
This knows my punisher; therefore as farr
From granting hee, as I from begging peace.
All hope excluded thus, behold in stead
Of us out-cast, exil'd, his new delight,
Mankind created, and for him this World.
So farwel Hope, and with Hope farwel Fear,
Farwel Remorse: all Good to me is lost;
Evil be thou my Good; by thee at least
Divided Empire with Heav'n's King I hold
By thee, and more then half perhaps will reigne;
As Man ere long, and this new World shall know.

Thus while he spake, each passion dimm'd his face
Thrice chang'd with pale, ire, envie and despair,
Which marr'd his borrow'd visage, and betray'd
Him counterfet, if any eye beheld.
For heav'nly mindes from such distempers foule
Are ever cleer. Whereof hee soon aware,
Each perturbation smooth'd with outward calme,

88 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK IV

Artificer of fraud ; and was the first
 That practis'd falshood under saintly shew,
 Deep malice to conceale, couch't with revenge :
 Yet not enough had practis'd to deceive
Uriel once warnd ; whose eye pursu'd him down
 The way he went, and on th' *Assyrian* mount
 Saw him disfigur'd, more then could befall
 Spirit of happie sort : his gestures fierce
 He mark'd and mad demeanour, then alone,
 As he suppos'd, all unobserv'd, unseen,
 So on he fares, and to the border comes,
 Of *Eden*, where delicious *Paradise*,
 Now nearer, Crowns with her enclosure green,
 As with a rural mound the champain head
 Of a steep wilderness, whose hairie sides
 With thicket overgrown, grotesque and wilde,
 Access deni'd ; and over head up grew
 Insuperable highth of loftiest shade,
 Cedar, and Pine, and Firr, and branching Palm,
 A Silvan Scene, and as the Ranks ascend
 Shade above shade, a woodie Theatre
 Of stateliest view. Yet higher then thir tops
 The verdurous wall of *Paradise* up sprung :
 Which to our general Sire gave prospect large
 Into his neather Empire neighbouring round.
 And higher then that Wall a circling row
 Of goodliest Trees loaden with fairest Fruit,
 Blossoms and Fruits at once a golden hue
 Appeerd, with gay enameld colours mixt :
 On which the Sun more glad impress'd his beams
 Then n fair Evening Cloud, or humid Bow,
 When God hath shew'd the Earth ; so lovely seem'd
 That I antskip : And of pure now purer aire
 Meets his approach, and to the heart inspires

Vernal

BOOK IV. *Paradise Lost.* 89

Vernal delight and joy, able to drive
 All sadness but despair: now gentle gales
 Fanning thir odoriferous wings dispense
 Native perfumes, and whisper whence they stole
 Those balmie spoiles. As when to them who saile
 Beyond the *Cape of Hope*, and now are past
Mozambic, off at Sea North-East windes blow
Sabeen Odours from the spicie shoare
 Of *Arabie* the blest, with such delay
 Well-pleas'd they slack thir course, and many a League
 Chear'd with the grateful smell old Ocean smiles.
 So entertain'd those odorous sweets the Fiend
 Who came thir bane, though with them better pleas'd
 Then *Asmodeus* with the fishie fume,
 That drove him, though enamour'd, from the Spouse
 Of *Tobits* Son, and with a vengeance sent
 From *Media* post to *Egypt*, there fast bound.

Now to th' ascent of that steep savage Hill
Satan had journied on, pensive and slow;
 But further way found none, so thick entwin'd,
 As one continu'd brake, the undergrowth
 Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplex'd
 All path of Man or Beast that past that way:
 One Gate there only was, and that look'd East
 On th' other side: which when th' arch-fellon saw
 Due entrance he disdain'd, and in contempt,
 At one slight bound high over leap'd all bound
 Of Hill or highest Wall, and sheer within
 Lights on his feet. As when a prowling Wolfe,
 Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,
 Watching where Shepherds pen thir Flocks at eve
 In hurd'l'd Cotes amid the field secure,
 Leaps o're the fence with ease into the Fould:
 Or as a Thief bent to unhoord the cash

90 *Paradise Lost,* BOOK IV.

Of some rich Burghier, whose substantial dores,
 Cross-barr'd and bolted fast, fear no assault,
 In at the window climbs, or o're the tiles;
 So clomb this first grand Thief into Gods Fould:
 So since into his Church lewd Hirelings climb.
 Thence up he flew, and on the Tree of Life
 The middle Tree and highest there that grew,
 Sat like a Cormorant; yet not true Life
 Thereby regain'd, but sat devising Death
 To them who liv'd; nor on the vertue thought
 Of that life-giving Plant, but only us'd
 For prospect, what well us'd had been the pledge
 Of immortality. So little knows
 Any, but God alone, to value right
 The good before him, but perverts best things
 To worst abuse, or to thir meanest use.
 Beneath him with new wonder now he views
 To all delight of human sense expos'd
 In narrow room Natures whole wealth, yea more,
 A Heav'n on Earth; for blissful Paradise
 Of God the Garden was, by him in the East
 Of Eden planted; Eden stretch'd her Line
 From *Auran* Eastward to the Royal Towns
 Of great *Selencia*, built by *Grecian* Kings,
 Or where the Sons of Eden long before
 Dwelt in *Telassar*: In this pleasant soile
 His far more pleasant Garden God ordain'd;
 Out of the fertil ground he caus'd to grow
 All Trees of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste;
 And all amid them stood the Tree of Life
 High eminent, blooming Ambrosial Fruit
 Of vegetable Gold; and next to Life
 Our Death the Tree of knowledge grew fast by,
 Knowledge of Good bought dear by knowing ill.

South

Southward through *Eden* went a River large,
Nor chang'd his course, but through the shaggie hill
Pass'd underneath ingulf'd, for God had thrown
That Mountain as his Garden mould high rais'd
Upon the rapid current, which through veins
Of porous Earth with kindly thirst up drawn
Rose a fresh Fountain, and with many a rill
Waterd the Garden; thence united fell
Down the steep glade, and met the neather Flood,
Which from his darksome passage now appeers,
And now divided into four main Streams,
Runs divers, wandring many a famous Realme
And Country whereof here needs no account,
But rather to tell how, if Art could tell,
How from that Saphire Fount the crisped Brooks,
Rowling on Orient Pearl and sands of Gold,
With mazie error under pendant shades
Ran Nectar, visiting each plant, and fed
Flours worthy of Paradise which not nice Art
In Beds and curious Knors, but Nature boon
Powrd forth profuse on Hill and Dale and Plaine,
Both where the morning Sun first warmly smote
The open field, and where the unpierc'd shade
Imbroud the noontide Bows: thus was this place,
A happy rural seat of various view; (Balme,
Groves whose rich Trees wept odorous Gums and
Others whose fruit burnisht with Golden Rinde
Hung amiable, *Hesperian* Fables true,
If true, here only, and of delicious taste:
Berwixt them Lawns, or level Downs, and Flocks
Grasing the tender herb, were interpos'd,
Or palmie hilloc, or the flourie lap
Of som irriguous Valley spred her store,
Flours of all hue, and without Thorn the Rose:

Another

92 *Paradise Lost.* Book IV.

Another side, umbrageous Grotts and Caves
 Of coole recess, o're which the mantling Vine
 Layes forth her purple Grape, and gently creeps
 Luxuriant; mean while murmuring waters fall
 Down the slope hills, disperst, or in a Lake,
 That to the fringed Bank with Myrtle crown'd,
 Her chrystal mirror holds, unite thir streams.
 The Birds thir quire apply; aires, vernal aires,
 Breathing the smell of field and grove, attune
 The trembling leaves, while Universal *Pan*
 Knit with the *Graces* and the *Hours* in dance
 Led on th' Eternal Spring. Not that faire field
 Of *Enna*, where *Proserpin* gathering flours
 Her self a fairer Floure by gloomie *Dis*
 Was gatherd, which cost *Ceres* all that pain
 To seek her through the world; nor that sweet Grove
 Of *Daphne* by *Orontes*, and th' inspir'd
Castalian Spring, might with this Paradise
 Of *Eden* strive; nor that *Nyseian* Ile
 Girt with the River *Triton*, where old *Cham*,
 Whom Gentiles *Ammon* call and *Lybian Jove*,
 Hid *Amalthea* and her Florid Son
 Young *Bacchus* from his Stepdame *Rhea's* eye;
 Nor where *Abassin* Kings thir issue Guard,
 Mount *Amara*, though this by som suppos'd
 True Paradise under the *Ethiop* Line
 By *Nilus* head, enclosd with shining Rock,
 A whole days journey high, but wide remote
 From this *Assyrian* Garden, where the Fiend
 Saw undelighted all delight, all kind
 Of living Creatures new to sight and strange:
 Two of far nobler shape erect and tall,
 Godlike erect, with native Honour clad
 In naked Majestic seemd Lords of all,

And

And worthie seemd, for in thir looks Divine
 The image of thir glorious Maker shon,
 Truth, Wisdom, Sanctitude severe and pure,
 Severe but in true filial freedom plac't;
 Whence true autoritie in men; though both
 Not equal, as thir sex not equal seemd,
 For contemplation hee and valour formd,
 For softness shee and sweet attractive Grace,
 Hee for God only, shee for God in him:
 His fair large Front and Eye sublime declar'd
 Absolute rule; and Hyacinthin Locks
 Round from his parted forlock manly hung
 Clustering, but not beneath his shoulders broad;
 Shee as a vail down to the slender waste
 Her unadorned golden tresses wore
 Disheveld, but in wanton ringlets wav'd
 As the Vine curls her tendrils, which impli'd
 Subjection, but requir'd with gentle sway,
 And by her yielded, by him best receivd,
 Yielded with coy submission, modest pride;
 And sweet reluctant amorous delay.
 Nor those mysterious parts were then conceald,
 Then was not guiltie shame, dishonest shame
 Of natures works, honor dishonorable,
 Sin-bred, how have ye troubl'd all mankind
 With shews instead, meer shews of seeming pure;
 And banisht from mans life his happiest life,
 Simplicitee and spotless innocence.
 So passd they naked on, nor shund the sight
 Of God or Angel, for they thought no ill:
 So hand in hand they passd, the lovliest pair
 That ever since in loves embraces met,
 Adam the goodliest man of men since borne
 His Sons, the fairest of her Daughters Eve.

Under

Under a tuft of shade that on a green
 Stood whispering soft, by a fresh Fountain side
 They sat them down, and after no more toil
 Of thir sweet Gardning labour then suffic'd
 To recommend coole *Zephyr*, and made ease
 More easie, wholsom thirst and appetite
 More grateful, to thir Supper Fruits they sell,
 Nectarine Fruits which the compliant boughes
 Yielded them, side-long as they sat recline
 On the soft downie Bank damask't with flours :
 The savourie pulp they chew, and in the rinde
 Still as they thirsted scoop the brimming stream ;
 Nor gentle purpose, nor endearing smiles
 Wanted, nor youthful dalliance as befits
 Fair couple, linkt in happie nuptial League,
 Alone as they. About them frisking playd
 All Beasts of th' Earth, since wilde, and of all chase
 In Wood or Wilderness, Forrest or Den ;
 Sporting the Lion rampd, and in his paw
 Dandl'd the Kid ; Bears, Tygers, Ounces, Pards,
 Gambold before them, th' unwieldy Elephant
 To make them mirth us'd all his might, and wreathd
 His lithe Proboscis ; close the Serpent sly
 Insinuating, wove with Gordian twine
 His breaded train, and of his fatal guile
 Gave proof unheeded ; others on the grass
 Coucht, and now fill'd with pasture gazing sat,
 Or Bedward ruminating : for the Sun
 Declin'd was hasting now with prone career
 To th' Ocean Isles, and in th' ascending Scale
 Of Heav'n the Starrs that usher Evening rose :
 When *Satan* still in gaze, as first he stood,
 Scarce thus at length faild speech recoverd sad.
 O Hell ! what doe mine eyes with grief behold,

Into our room of blifs thus high advanc't
 Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps,
 Not Spirits, yet to heav'nly Spirits bright
 Little inferior; whom my thoughts pursue
 With wonder, and could love, so lively shines
 In them Divine resemblance, and such grace
 The hand that form'd them on thir shape hath pour'd,
 Ah gentle pair, yee little think how nigh
 Your change approaches, when all these delights
 Will vanish and deliver ye to woe,
 More woe, the more your tast is now of joy;
 Happie, but for so happie ill secur'd
 Long to continue, and this high seat your Heav'n
 Ill fenc't for Heav'n to keep out such a foe
 As now is enterd; yet no purpos'd foe
 To you whom I could pittie thus forlorne
 Though I unpittied; League with you I seek,
 And mutual amitie so freight, so close,
 That I with you must dwell, or you with me
 Henceforth; my dwelling haply may not please
 Like this fair Paradise, your sense, yet such
 Accept your Makers work; he gave it me,
 Which I as freely give; Hell shall unfold,
 To entertain yon two, her widest Gates,
 And send forth all her Kings; there will be room,
 Not like these narrow limits, to receive
 Your numerous offspring; if no better place,
 Thank him who puts me loath to this revenge
 On you who wrong me not for him who wrong'd,
 And should I at your harmless innocence
 Melt, as I doe, yet public reason just,
 Honour and Empire with revenge enlarg'd,
 By conquering this new World, compels me now
 To do what else though damnd I should abhorre.

So

96 Paradise Lost. Book IV

So spake the Fiend, and with necessitie,
 The Tyrants plea, excus'd his devilish deeds.
 Then from his lofty stand on that high Tree
 Down he alights among the sportful Herd
 Of those fourfooted kindes, himself now one,
 Now other, as thir shape servd best his end
 Nearer to view his prey, and unesp'd
 To mark what of thir state he more might learn
 By word or action markt : about them round
 A Lion now he stalkes with fierie glare,
 Then as a Tyger, who by chance hath spi'd
 In some Purlieu two gentle Fawnes at play,
 Strait crouches close, then rising changes oft
 His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground
 Whence rushing he might surest seize them both
 Grip't in each paw : When *Adam* first of men
 To first of women *Eve* thus moving speech,
 Turn'd him all eare to hear new utterance flow.

Sole partner and sole part of all these joyes,
 Dearer thy self then all ; needs must the power
 That made us, and for us this ample World
 Be infinitely good, and of his good
 As liberal and free as infinite,
 That rais'd us from the dust and plac't us here
 In all this happiness, who at his hand
 Have nothing merited, nor can performe
 Aught whereof he hath need, hee who requires
 From us no other service then to keep
 This one, this easie charge, of all the Trees
 In Paradise that bear delicious fruit
 So various, not to taste that onely Tree
 Of knowledge, planted by the Tree of Life,
 So neer grows Death to Life, what ere Death is,
 Som dreadful thing no doubt ; for well thou knowest
 God

God hath pronounc't it death to taste that Tree
The only sign of our obedience left
Among so many signes of power and rule
Confer'd upon us, and Dominion giv'n
Over all other Creatures that possess
Earth, Aire, and Sea. Then let us not think hard
One easie prohibition, who enjoy
Free leave so large to all things else, and choice
Unlimited of manifold delights :

But let us ever praise him, and extoll
His bountie, following our delightful task
To prune these growing Plants, and tend these Flours,
Which were it toilsom, yet with thee were sweet.

To whom thus *Eve* repli'd. O thou for whom
And from whom I was form'd flesh of thy flesh,
And without whom am to no end, my Guide
And Head, what thou hast said is just and right.
For wee to him indeed all praises owe,
And daily thanks, I chiefly who enjoy
So farr the happier Lot, enjoying thee
Præminent by so much odds, while thou
Like consort to thy self canst no where find.
That day I oft remember, when from sleep
I first awak't, and found my self repos'd
Under a shade of flours, much wondring where
And what I was, whence thither brought, and how.
Not distant far from thence a murmuring sound
Of waters issu'd from a Cave and spread
Into a liquid Plain, then stood unmov'd
Pure as th' expanse of Heav'n ; I thither went
With unexperient thought, and laid me downe
On the green bank, to look into the cleer
Smooth Lake, that to me seemd another Skie.
As I bent down to look, just opposite,

God

H

A Shape

A Shape within the watry gleam appeerd
 Bending to look on me, I started back,
 It started back, but pleas'd I soon returnd,
 Pleas'd it returnd as soon with answering looks
 Of sympathie and love ; there I had fixt
 Mine eyes till now, and pin'd with vain desire
 Had not a voice thus warnd me, What thou see'st,
 What there thou see'st fair Creature is thy self,
 With thee it came and goes : but follow me,
 And I will bring thee where no shadow staies
 Thy coming, and thy soft imbraces., hee
 Whose image thou art, him thou shalt enjoy
 Inseparablie thine, to him shalt beare
 Multitudes like thy self, and thence be call'd
 Mother of human Race : What could I doe,
 But follow strait, invisibly thus led ?
 Till I esp'd thee, fair indeed and tall,
 Under a Platan, yet methought less faire,
 Less winning soft, less amiable milde,
 Then that smooth watry image ; back I turnd,
 Thou following cryd st aloud, Return faire *Eve*,
 Whom si'st thou ? whom thou si'st, of him thou art,
 His flesh, his bone ; to give thee being I lent
 Out of my side to thee, neere'st my heart
 Substantial Life, to have thee by my side
 Henceforth an individual solace dear ;
 Part of my Soul I seek thee, and thee claim
 My other self : with that thy gentle hand
 Seis'd mine, I yielded, and from that time see
 How beauty is excell'd by manly grace
 And wisdom, which alone is truly fair.

So spake our general Mother, and with eyes
 Of conjugal attraction unprov'd,
 And meek surrender, half imbracing leand

BOOK IV. *Paradise Lost.* 99

On our first Father, half her swelling Breast
Naked met his under the flowing Go'd
Of her loose tresses hid : he in delight
Both of her Beauty and submissive Charms
Smil'd with superior Love, as *Jupiter*
On *Juno* smiles, when he impregns the Clouds
That shed *May* Flowers ; and press'd her Matron lip
With kisses pure : aside the Devil turn'd
For envie, yet with jealous leer maligne
Ey'd them askance, and to himself thus plaind.

Sight hateful, sight tormenting ! thus these two
Imparadis't in one anothers arms
The happier *Eden*, shall enjoy thir fill
Of blis on blis, while I to Hell am thrust
Where neither joy nor love, but fierce desire,
Among our other torments not the least,
Still unfulfill'd with pain of longing pines ;
Yet let me not forget what I have gain'd
From thir own mouths ; all is not theirs it seems :
One fatal Tree there stands of Knowledge call'd,
Forbidden them to taste : Knowledge forbid'n ?
Suspicious, reasonless. Why should thir Lord
Envie them that ? can it be sin to know,
Can it be death ? and do they onely stand
By Ignorance, is that thir happie state,
The proof of thir obedience and thir faith ?
O fair foundation laid whereon to build
Thir ruin ! Hence I will excite thir minds
With more desire to know, and to reject
Envious commands, invented with designe
To keep them low whom knowledge might exalt
Equal with Gods ; aspiring to be such,
They taste and die : what likelier can ensue ?
But first with narrow search I must walk round

100 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK IV.

This Garden, and no corner leave unspid;
 A chance but chance may lead where I may meet
 Some wandring Spirit of Heav'n, by Fountain side,
 Or in thick shade retir'd, from him to draw
 What further would be learnt. Live while ye may.
 Yet happie pair, enjoy, till I return,
 Short pleasures, for long woes are to succeed.

So saying, his proud step he scornful turn'd,
 But with sly circumspection, and began (roam.
 Through wood, through waste, o're hill, o're dale his
 Mean while in utmost Longitude, where Heav'n
 With Earth and Ocean meets, the setting Sun
 Slowly descended, and with right aspect
 Against the Eastern Gate of Paradise
 Level'd his evening Rayes: It was a Rock
 Of Alabaster, pil'd up to the Clouds,
 Conspicuous farr, winding with one ascent
 Accessible from Earth, one entrance high;
 The rest was craggie cliff, that overhung
 Still as it rose, impossible to climbe.
 Betwixt these rockie Pillars *Gabriel* sat,
 Chief of th' Angelic Guards, awaiting night;
 About him exercis'd Heroic Games
 Th' unarmed Youth of Heav'n, but nigh at hand
 Celestial Armourie, Shields, Helmes, and Spears,
 Hung high with Diamond flaming, and with Gold.
 Thither came *Uriel*, gliding through the Eeven
 On a Sun beam, swift as a shooting Starr
 In *Autumn* thwarts the night, when vapors fir'd
 Impress the Air, and shews the Mariner
 From what point of his Compass to beware
 Impetuous winds: He thus began in haste.

Gabriel, to thee thy course by Lot hath giv'n
 Charge and strict watch that to this happie place

No

V. BOOK IV. *Paradise Lost.* 101

No evil thing approach or enter in ;
 This day at highth of Noon came to my Spheare
 A Spirit, zealous, as he seem'd, to know
 More of th' Almightyes works, and chiefly Man
 Gods latest Image : I describ'd his way
 Bent all on speed, and markt his Aerie Gate ;
 But in the Mount that lies from *Eden* North,
 Where he first lighted, soon discernd his looks
 Alien from Heav'n, with passions foul obscur'd:
 Mine eye pursu'd him still, but under shade
 Lost sight of him ; one of the banisht crew
 I fear, hath ventur'd from the deep, to raise
 New troubles ; him thy care must be to find.

To whom the winged Warriour thus returnd:
Uriel, no wonder if thy perfect sight,
 Amid the Suns bright circle where thou sitst,
 See farr and wide : in at this Gate none pass
 The vigilance here plac't, but such as come
 Well known from Heav'n ; and since Meridian hour
 No Creature thence : if Spirit of other sort,
 So minded, have oreleapt these earthie bounds
 On purpose, hard thou knowst it to exclude
 Spiritual substance with corporeal barr.
 But if within the circuit of these walks,
 In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom
 Thou tellst, by morrow dawning I shall know.

So promis'd hee, and *Uriel* to his charge
 Returnd on that bright beam, whose point now raisd
 Bore him slope downward to the Sun now fall'n
 Beneath th' *Azores* ; whither the prime Orb,
 Incredible how swift, had thither rowl'd
 Diurnal, or this less volubil Earth
 By shorter flight to th' East, had left him there
 Arraying with reflected Purple and Gold

H 3

The

The Clouds that on his Western Throne attend :
 Now came still Eevening on, and Twilight gray
 Had in her sober Liverie all things clad ;
 Silence accompanied. for Beast and Bird,
 They to thir grassie Couch, these to thir Nests
 Were slunk, all but the wakeful Nightingale ;
 She all night long her amorous descant sung ;
 Silence was pleas'd : now glow'd the Firmament
 With living Saphirs : *Hesperus* that led
 The starrie Host, rode brightest, till the Moon
 Rising in clouded Majestic, at length
 Apparent Queen unvaild her peerless light,
 And o're the dark her Silver Mantle threw.

When *Adam* thus to *Eve*: Fair Consort, th' hour
 Of night, and all things now retir'd to rest
 Mind us of like repose, since God hath set
 Labour and rest, as day and night to men
 Successive, and the timely dew of sleep
 Now falling with soft slumbrous weight inclines
 Our eye-lids ; other Creatures all day long
 Rove idle unimploid, and less need rest ;
 Man hath his daily work of body or mind
 Appointed, which declares his Dignitie,
 And the regard of Heav'n on all his waies ;
 While other Animals unactive range,
 And of thir doings God takes no account.
 To morrow ere fresh Morning streak the East
 With first approach of light, we must be ris'n,
 And at our pleasant labour, to reform
 Yon flourie Arbors, yonder Allies green,
 Our walk at noon, with branches overgrown,
 That mock our scant manuring, and require
 More hands then ours to lop thir wanton growth :
 Those Blossoms also, and those dropping Gummis,

That

V. BOOK IV. *Paradise Lost.* 183

That lie bestrowne unsightly and unsmooth,
Ask riddance, if we mean to tread with ease;
Mean while, as Nature wills, Night bids us rest.

To whom thus *Eve* with perfect beauty adorn'd.
My Author and Disposer, what thou bidst
Unargu'd I obey; so God ordains,

God is thy Law, thou mine: to know no more
Is womans happiest knowledge and her praise.

With thee conversing I forget all time,
All seasons and thir change, all please alike.

Sweet is the breath of morn, her rising sweet,
With charm of earliest Birds; pleasant the Sun

When first on this delightful Land he spreads
His orient Beams, on Herb, Tree, Fruit, and Flour,

Glistring with dew; fragrant the fertile Earth
After soft showers; and sweet the coming on

Of grateful Eevning milde, then silent Night
With this her solemn Bird and this fair Moon,

And these the Gemms of Heav'n, her starrie train:
But neither breath of Morn when she ascends

With charm of earliest Birds, nor rising Sun
On this delightful Land, nor Herb, Fruit, Floure,

Glistring with dew, nor fragrance after showers,
Nor grateful Eevning milde, nor silent Night

With this her solemn Bird, nor walk by Moon,
Or glittering Starr-light without thee is sweet.

But wherefore all night long shine these, for whom
This glorious light, when sleep hath shut all eyes?

To whom our general Ancestor repli'd.
Daughter of God and Man, accomplisht *Eve*,

Those have thir course to finish, round the Earth,
By morrow Eevning, and from Land to Land

In order, though to Nations yet unborn,
Ministring light prepar'd, they set and rise;

Least total darkness should by Night regain
 Her old possession, and extinguish life
 In Nature and all things, which these soft fires
 Not only enlighten, but with kindly heate
 Of various influence foment and warme,
 Temper or nourish, or in part shed down
 Thir stellar vertue on all kinds that grow
 On Earth, made hereby apter to receive
 Perfection from the Suns more potent Ray.
 These then, though unbeheld in deep of night,
 Shine not in vain, nor think, though men were none,
 That heav'n would want spectators, God want praise
 Millions of spiritual Creatures walk the Earth
 Unseen, both when we wake, and when we sleep :
 All these with ceaseless praise his works behold
 Both day and night : how often from the steep
 Of echoing Hill or Thicket have we heard
 Celestial voices to the midnight air,
 Sole, or responsive each to others note
 Singing thir great Creator : oft in bands
 While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk
 With Heav'nly touch of instrumental sounds
 In full harmonic number joind, thir songs
 Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to Heaven.

Thus talking hand in hand alone they pass'd
 On to thir blissful Bower ; it was a place
 Chos'n by the sovran Planter, when he fram'd
 All things to mans delightful use ; the roose
 Of thickest covert was inwoven shade
 Laurel and Mirtle, and what higher grew
 Of firm and fragrant leaf ; on either side
Acanthus, and each odorous bushie shrub
 Fenc'd up the verdant wall ; each beauteous flower,
Iris all hues, *Roses*, and *Gessamin*

Rear'd

IV. BOOK IV. *Paradise Lost.* 105

Rear'd high thir flourish't heads between, & wrought
Mosaic; under foot the Violet,
Crocus, and Hyacinth with rich inlay
Broiderd the ground, more colour'd then with stone
Of costliest Emblem: other Creature here
Beast, Bird, Insect, or Worm durst enter none;
Such was thir awe of Man. In shadie Bower
More sacred and sequesterd, though but feignd,
Pan or *Sylvanus* never slept, nor Nymph,
Nor *Faunus* hunted. Here in close recess
With Flowers, Garlands, and sweet-smelling Herbs
Espoused *Eve* deckt first her nuptial Bed,
And heav'nly Quires the Hymenæan sung,
What day the genial Angel to our Sire
Brought her in naked beauty more adorn'd,
More lovely then *Pandora*, whom the Gods
Endowd with all thir gifts, and O too like
In sad event, when to the unwiser Son
Of *Japhet* brought by *Hermes*, she ensnard
Mankind with her faire looks, to be avengd
On him who had stole *Joves* authentic fire.

Thus at thir shadie Lodge arriv'd, both stood
Both turnd, and under op'n Skie ador'd
The God that made both Skie, Air, Earth and Heav'n
Which they beheld, the Moons resplendent Globe
And starrie Pole: Thou also mad'st the Night,
Maker Omnipotent, and thou the Day,
Which we in our appointed work imployd
Have finisht happie in our mutual help
And mutual love, the Crown of all our blifs
Ordaind by thee, and this delicious place
For us too large, where thy abundance wants
Partakers, and uncropt falls to the ground.
But thou hast promis'd from us two a Race

106 **Paradise Lost.** **Book IV.**

To fill the Earth, who shall with us extoll
 Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake
 And when we seek, as now, thy gift of sleep.
 This said unanimous, and other Rites
 Observing none, but adoration pure
 Which God likes best, into thir inmost bowre
 Handed they went; and eas'd the putting off
 These troublefom disguises which we wear,
 Strait side by side were laid, nor turn'd I weene
Adam from his fair Spouse, nor *Eve* the Rites
 Mysterious of connubial Love refus'd:
 Whatever Hypocrites austerely talk
 Of puritie and place and innocence,
 Defaming as impure what God declares
 Pure, and commands to som, leaves free to all.
 Our Maker bids increase, who bids abstain
 But our destroyer, foe to God and Man?
 Haile wedded Love, mysterious Law, true source
 Of human offspring, sole proprietie,
 In Paradise of all things common else.
 By thee adulterous lust was driv'n from men
 Among the bestial herds to raunge, by thee
 Founded in Reason, Loyal, Just, and Pure,
 Relations dear, and all the Charities
 Of Father, Son, and Brother first were knawn,
 Farr be it, that I should write thee sin or blame,
 Or think thee unbecoming holiest place,
 Perpetual Fountain of Domestic sweets,
 Whose bed is undefil'd and chaste pronounc't,
 Present, or past, as Saints and Patriarchs us'd.
 Here Love his golden shafts imploies, here lights
 His constant Lamp, and waves his purple wings,
 Reigns here and revels; not in the bought smile
 Of Harlots, loveless, joyless, undeard,

Book IV. *Paradise Lost*. 107

Casual fruition, nor in Court Amours
Mixt Dance, or wanton Mask, or Midnight Bal,
Or Serenate, which the starv'd Lover sings
To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain.
These lulld by Nightingales imbracing slept,
And on thir naked limbes the flourish'd roof
Show'd Roses, which the Morn repair'd. Sleep on
Blest pair; and O yet happiest if ye seek
No happier state, and know to know no more.

Now had night measur'd with her shaddowie Cond
Half way up Hill this vast Sublunar Vault,
And from thir Ivorie Port the Cherubim
Forth issuing at th' accustomed hour stood arm'd
To thir night watches in warlike Parade,
When *Gabriel* to his next in power thus spake.

Uzziel, half these draw off, and coast the South
With strictest watch; these other wheel the North,
Our circuit meets full West. As flame they part
Half wheeling to the Shield, half to the Spear.
From these, two strong and subtle Spirits he call'd
That neer him stood, and gave them thus in charge.

Ithuriel and *Zephon*, with wings speed
Search through this Garden, leave unsearcht no nook;
But chiefly where those two fair Creatures Lodge,
Now laid perhaps asleep secure of harme.
This Evening from the Sun's decline arriv'd
Who tells of som infernal Spirit seen
Hitherward bent (who could have thought?) escap'd
The bars of Hell, on errand bad no doubt:
Such where ye find, seise fast, and hither bring.

So saying, on he led his radiant Files,
Daz'ling the Moon; these to the Bower direct
In search of whom they sought: him there they found
Squat like a Toad, close at the eare of *Eve*;

Assay;

Assaying by his Devilish art to reach
 The Organs of her Fancie, and with them forge
 Illusions as he list, Phantasms and Dreams,
 Or if, inspiring venom, he might taint
 Th' animal Spirits that from pure blood arise
 Like gentle breaths from Rivers pure, thence raise
 At least distemperd, discontented thoughts,
 Vain hopes, vaine aimes, inordinate desires
 Blown up with high conceits ingendring pride
 Him thus intent *Ithuriel* with his Spear
 Touch'd lightly; for no falsehood can endure
 Touch of Celestial temper, but returns
 Of force to its own likeness: up he starts
 Discoverd and surpriz'd. As when a spark
 Lights on a heap of nitrous Powder, laid
 Fit for the Tun som Magazin to store
 Against a rumord Warr, the smuttie graine
 With sudden blaze diffus'd, inflames the Aire:
 So started up in his own shape the Fiend.
 Back stept those two faire Angels half amaz'd
 So sudden to behold the grieellie King;
 Yet thus, unmovd with tear, accost him soon.

Which of those rebell Spirits adjudg'd to Hell
 Com'st thou, escap'd thy prison, and transform'd,
 Why satst thou like an enemy in waite
 Here watching at the head of these that sleep?

Know ye not then said *Satan*, fill'd with scorn,
 Know ye not mee? ye knew me once no mate
 For you, there sitting where ye durst not soare;
 Not to know mee argues your selves unknown,
 The lowest of your throng; or if ye know,
 Why ask ye, and superfluous begin
 Your message, like to end as much in vain?
 To whom thus *Zephon*, answering scorn with scorn,

Think

IV. BOOK IV. *Paradise Lost.* 109.

Think not, revolted Spirit, thy shape the same,
Or undiminisht brightness, to be known
As when thou stoodst in Heav'n upright and pure;
That Glorie then, when thou no more wast good,
Departed from thee, and thou resembl'st now
Thy sin and place of doom obscure and foule.
But come, for thou, besure, shalt giue account
To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep
This place inviolable, and these from harm.

So spake the Cherûbe, and his grave rebuke
Severe in youthful beaurie, added grace
Invincible: abasht the Devil stood,
And felt how awful goodnes is, and saw
Vertue in her shape how lovly, saw, and pin'd
His loss; but chiefly to find here observd
His lustre visibly impar'd; yet seemd
Undaunted. If I must contend, said he,
Best with the best, the Sender not the sent,
Or all at once; more glorie will be wonn,
Or less be lost. Thy fear, said *Zephon* bold,
Will save us trial what the least can doe
Single against thee wicked, and thence weak.

The Fiend repli'd not, overcome with rage;
But like a proud Steed reind, went hautie on,
Chaumping his iron curb: to strive or flie
He held it vain; awe from above had quell'd
His heart, not else dismaid, Now drew they nigh
The western Point, where those half-rounding guards
Just met, and closing stood in Squadron joind
Awaiting next command. To whom thir Chief
Gabriel from the Front thus call'd aloud.

O friends, I hear the tread of nimble feet
Hasting this way, and now by glimps discern
Liburriel and *Zephon* through the shade,

And

110 *Paradise Lost.* Book IV

And with them comes a third of Regal port,
But faded splendor wan; who by his gate
And fierce demeanour seems the Prince of Hell,
Not likely to part hence without contest;
Stand firm, for in his look defiance lours.

He scarce and ended, when those two approach'd
And brief related whom they brought, where found
How busied, in what form and posture coucht.

To whom with stern regard thus *Gabriel* spake.
Why hast thou, *Satan*, broke the bounds prescrib'd
To thy transgressions, and disturb'd the charge
Of others, who approve not to transgress
By thy example, but have power and right
To question thy bold entrance on this place;
Imploi'd it seems to violate sleep, and those
Whose dwelling God hath planted here in bliss.

To whom thus *Satan*, with contemptuous brow,
Thou *Gabriel*, hadst in Heav'n th' esteem of wise,
And such I held thee; but this question askt
Puts me in doubt. Lives ther who loves his pain?
Who would not, finding way, break loose from Hell
Though thither doom'd? Thou wouldst thy self, and
And boldly venture to whatever place (doubt
Farthest from pain, where thou mightst hope to change
Torment with ease, and soonest recompence
Dole with delight, which in this place I sought;
To thee no reason; who knowst only good,
But evil hast not tri'd: and wilt object
His will who bound us? let him surer barr
His Iron Gates, if he intends our stay
In that dark durance: thus much what was askt.
The rest is true, they found me where they say;
But that implies not violence or harme.

Thus he in scorn. The warlike Angel mov'd,

Disdain

BOOK IV. **Paradise Lost.** LIII

Disdainfully half smiling thus repli'd.
O loss of one in Heav'n to judge of wise,
Since *Satan* fell, whom follie overthrew,
And now returns him from his prison scap't,
Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise
Or not, who ask what boldness brought him higher
Unlicenc't from his bounds in Hell prescrib'd;
So wise he judges it to fly from pain
However, and to scape his punishment.
So judge thou still, presumptuous, till the wrath,
Which thou incurr'st by flying, meet thy flight
Seavenfold, and scourge that wisdom back to Hell,
Which taught thee yet no better, that no pain
Can equal anger infinite provok't.

But wherefore thou alone; wherefore with thee
Came not all Hell broke loose? is pain to them
Less pain, less to be fled, or thou then they
Less hardie to endure? courageous Chief,
The first in flight from pain, had'st thou alledg'd
To thy deserted Host this cause of flight,
Thou surely hadst not come sole fugitive.

To which the Fiend thus answerd frowning stern;
Not that I less endure, or shrink from pain,
Insulting Angel, well thou knowst I stood
Thy fiercest, when in Battel to thy aide
Thy blasting volied Thunder made all speed
And seconded thy else not dreaded Spear.
But still thy words at random, as before,
Argue thy inexperience what behooves
From hard assaies and ill successes past
A faithful Leader, not to hazard all
Through wayes of danger by himself untri'd,
I therefore, I alone first undertook

To

To wing the desolate Abyss, and spie
 This new created World, whereof in Hell
 Fame is not silent, here in hope to find
 Better abode, and my afflicted Powers
 To settle here on Earth, or in mid Aire ;
 Though for possession put to try once more
 What thou and thy gay Legions dare against ;
 Whose easier business where to serve thir Lord
 High up in Heav'n, with songs to hymne his Throne,
 And practis'd distances to cringe, not fight.

To whom the warriour Angel, soon repli'd.
 To say and strait unsay, pretending first
 Wise to flie pain, professing next the Spie,
 Argues no Leader but a lyar tract,
Satan, and couldst thou faithful add ? O name,
 O sacred name of faithfulness profan'd !
 Faithful to whom ? to thy rebellious crew ?
 Armie of Fiends, fit body to fit head ;
 Was this your discipline and faith ingag'd,
 Your military obedience, to dissolve
 Allegiance to th' acknowdg'd Power supream ?
 And thou sly hypocrite, who now wouldst seem
 Patron of liberty, who more then thou
 Once fawn'd, and cring'd, and servilly ador'd
 Heav'n's awful Monarch ? wherefore but in hope
 To dispossess him, and thy self to reigne ?
 But mark what I arreede thee now, avant ;
 Flie thither whence thou fledst : if from this houre
 Within these hallowd limits thou appeer,
 Back to th' infernal pit I drag thee chaind,
 And Seale thee so, as henceforth not to scorne
 The facil gates of hell too slightly barrd.

So threatn'd hee, but *Satan* to no threats
 Gave heed, but waxing more in rage repli'd :

Then

BOOK IV. *Paradise Lost.* 113

Then when I am thy captive talk of chains,
Proud limitarie Cherube, but ere then
Farr heavier load thy self expect to feel
From my prevailing arme, though Heavens King
Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy Compeers,
Us'd to the yoke, draw't his triumphant wheels
In progress through the Rode of Heav'n Star-pav'd.

While thus he spake, th' Angelic Squadron bright
Turn'd fierie red, sharpening in mooned hornes
Thir Phalanx, and began to hem him round
With ported Spears, as thick as when a field
Of *Ceres* ripe for harvest waving bends
Her bearded Grove of ears, which way the wind
Swayes them; the careful Plowman doubting stands
Least on the threshing floore his hopeful sheaves
Prove chaff. On th' other side *Satan* allarm'd
Collecting all his might dilated stood,
Like *Teneriff* or *Atlas* unremov'd:

His stature reacht the Skie, and on his Crest
Sat horror Plum'd; nor wanted in his graspe
What seem'd both Spear and Shield: now dreadful
Might have ensu'd, nor onely Paradise (deeds
In this commotion, but the Starrie Cope
Of Heav'n perhaps, or all the Elements
At least had gon to rack,, disturb'd and torne
With violence of this conflict, had not soon
Th' Eternal to prevent such horrid fray
Hung forth in Heav'n his golden Scales, yet seen
Betwixt *Astrea* and the *Scorpion* signe,
Wherein all things created first he weighd,
The pendulous round Earth with ballanc't Aire
In counterpoise, now ponders all events,
Batells and Realms: in these he put two weights
The sequel each of parting and of fight;

The latter quick up flew, and kickt the beam ;
Which *Gabriel* spying, thus bespake the Fiend.

Satan, I know thy strength, and thou knowst mine,
Neither our own but giv'n ; what follie then
To boast what Arms can do, since thine no more
Then Heav'n permits, nor mine, though doubl'd now
To trample thee as mire : for proof look up,
And read thy Lot in yon celestial Sign (weak,
Where thou art weigh'd, and shown how light, how
If thou resist. The Fiend lookt up and knew
His mounted scale aloft : nor more ; but fled
Murmuring, and with him fled the shades of night.

The End of the Fourth Book.

Paradise Lost.

BOOK V.

THE ARGUMENT.

Morning approach'd, Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream; he likes it not, yet comforts her: They come forth to their day labours: Their Morning Hymn at the Door of their Bower. God to render Man inexcusable sends Raphael to admonish him of his obedience, of his free estate, of his enemy near at hand; who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to Paradise, his appearance describ'd, his coming discern'd by Adam afar off sitting at the door of his Bower; he goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of Paradise got together by Eve; their discourse at Table: Raphael performs his message; minds Adam of his state and of his enemy; relates at Adams request who that enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his first revolt in Heaven, and the occasion thereof; how he drew his Legions after him to the parts of the

North, and there incited them to rebel with him, persuading all but only Abdiel a Seraph, who in Argument dissuades and opposes him, then forsakes him.

NOW Morn her rosie steps in th' Eastern Clime
 Advancing, sow'd the earth with Orient Pearl,
 When *Adam* wak't, so custom'd, for his sleep
 Was Aerie light from pure digestion bred,
 And temperat vapors bland, which th' only sound
 Of leaves and fuming rills, *Aurora's* fan,
 Lightly dispers'd, and the thrill *Matin* Song
 Of Birds on every bough; so much the more
 His wonder was to find unwak'nd *Eve*
 With Tresses discompos'd, and glowing Check,
 As through unquiet rest: he on his side
 Leaning half-rai's'd, with looks of cordial Love
 Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld
 Beautie, which whether waking or asleep,
 Shot forth peculiar Graces; then with voice
 Milde, as when *Zephyrus* on *Flora* breathes,
 Her hand soft touching, whisperd thus. Awake
 My fairest, my espous'd, my latest found,
 Heav'n's last best gift, my ever new delight,
 Awake; the morning shines, and the fresh field
 Calls us, we lose the prime, to mark how spring
 Our tended Plants, how blows the Citron Grove,
 What drops the Myrrhe, and what the balmie Reed,
 How Nature paints her colours, how the Bee
 Sits on the Bloom extracting liquid sweet.

Such wispering wak'd her, but with startl'd eye
 On *Adam*, whom embracing, thus she spake.

O Sole in whom my thoughts find all repose;
 My Glorie, my Perfection, glad I see
 Thy face, and Morn return'd, for I this Night,

Such

BOOK V. *Paradise Lost.* 187

Such night till this I never pass'd, have dream'd,
 If dream'd, not as I oft am wont, of thee,
 Works of day pass't, or morrows next design,
 But of offence and trouble, which my mind
 Knew never till this irksom night; methought
 Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk
 With gentle voice, I thought it thine; it said,
 Why sleepest thou *Eve*? now is the pleasant time,
 The cool, the silent, save where silence yields
 To the night-warbling Bird, that now awake
 Tunes sweetest his love-labor'd song; now reignes
 Full Orb'd the Moon, and with more pleasing light
 Shadowie sets off the face of things; in vain,
 If none regard; Heav'n wakes with all his eyes,
 Whom to behold but thee, Natures desire,
 In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment
 Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze.
 I rose as at thy call, but found thee not;
 To find thee I directed then my walk;
 And on, methought, alone I pass'd through ways
 That brought me on a sudden to the Tree
 Of interdicted Knowledge: fair it seem'd,
 Much fairer to my Fancie then by day:
 And as I wondring lookt, beside it stood
 One shap'd and wing'd like one of those from Heav'n
 By us oft seen; his dewie locks distill'd
 Ambrosia; on that Tree he also gaz'd;
 And O fair Plant, said he, with fruit furcharg'd,
 Deigns none to ease thy load and taste thy sweet,
 Nor God, nor Man; is Knowledge so despis'd?
 Or envie, or what reserve forbids to taste?
 Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold
 Longer thy offerd good, why else set here?
 This said he paus'd not, but with ventrous Arme

He pluckt, he tasted; mee damp horror chill'd
 At such bold words voucht with a deed so bold:
 But he thus overjoy'd, O Fruit Divine,
 Sweet of thy self, but much more sweet thus crompt,
 Forbidd'n here, it seems, as onely fit
 For Gods, yet able to make Gods of Men:
 And why not Gods of Men, since good, the more
 Communicated, more abundant growes,
 The Author not impair'd, but honour'd more?
 Here, happie Creature, fair Angelic *Eve*,
 Partake thou also; happie though thou art,
 Happier thou mayst be, worthier canst not be:
 Taste this, and be henceforth among the Gods
 Thy self a Goddess, not to Earth confin'd,
 But sometimes in the Air, as wee, sometimes
 Ascend to Heav'n, by merit thine, and see
 What life the Gods live there, and such live thou.
 So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,
 Even to my mouth of that same fruit held part
 Which he had pluckt; the pleasant savourie smell
 So quick'nd appetite, that I, methought,
 Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the Clouds
 With him I flew, and underneath beheld
 The Earth outstretcht immense, a prospect wide
 And various: wondring at my sight and change
 To this high exaltation; suddenly
 My Guide was gon, and I, methought, sunk down,
 And fell asleep; but O how glad I wak'd
 To find this but a dream! Thus *Eve* her Night
 Related, and thus *Adam* answer'd sad.

Best Image of my self and dearer half,
 The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep
 Affects me equally; nor can I like
 This uncouth dream, of evil sprung I fear;

Yet evil whence? In thee can harbour none,
 Created pure. But know that in the Soule
 Are many lesser Faculties that serve
 Reason as chief; among these Fancie next
 Her office holds; of all external things,
 Which the five watchful Senses represent,
 She forms Imaginations, Aerie shapes,
 Which Reason joyning or disjoyning, frames
 All what we affirm or what deny, and call
 Our knowledge or opinion; then retires
 Into her privat Cell when Nature rests.
 Oft in her absence mimic Fancie wakes,
 To imitate her; but misjoyning shapes,
 Wilde work produces oft, and most in dreams,
 Ill matching words and deeds long past or late.
 Som such resemblances methinks I find
 Of our last Eevnings talk, in this thy dream,
 But with addition strange; yet be not sad.
 Evil into the mind of God or Man
 May come and go, so unapprov'd, and leave
 No spot or blame behind: Which gives me hope
 That what in sleep thou didst abhor to dream,
 Waking thou never wilt consent to do.
 Be not disheart'nd then, nor cloud those looks
 That wont to be more chearful and serene
 Then when fair Morning first smiles on the World,
 And let us to our fresh employments rise
 Among the Groves, the Fountains, and the Flours
 That open now thir choicest bosom'd smells
 Reservd from night, and kept for thee in store.

So cheard he his fair Spouse, and she was cheard,
 But silently a gentle tear let fall
 From either eye, and wip'd them with her haire;
 Two other precious drops that ready stood,

Each in thir Chrystal sluice, he ere they fell
Kiss'd as the gracious signs of sweet remorse
And pious awe, that feard to have offended.

So all was cleared, and to the Field they haste,
But first from under Thadie arboreous roof,
Soon as they forth were come to open sight
Of day-spring, and the Sun, who scarce up risen
With wheels yet hov'ring o're the Ocean brim,
Shot parallel to the earth his dewie ray,
Discovering in wide Lantskip all the East
Of Paradise and *Edens* happie Plains,
Lowly they bow'd adoring, and began
Thir Orisons, each Morning duly paid
In various style, for neither various style
Nor holy rapture wanted they to praise
Thir Maker, in fit strains pronounc't or sung,
Unmeditated, such prompt eloquence
Flowd from thir lips, in Prose or numerous Verse,
More tuneable then needed Lute or Harp
To add More sweetness, and they thus began.

These are thy glorious works, Parent of good,
Almightie, thine this universal Frame,
Thus wondrous fair; thy self how wondrous then!
Unspeakable, who sittest above these Heavens
To us invisible or dimly seen.

In these thy lowest works, yet these declare
Thy goodness beyond thought, and Power Divine:
Speak yee who best can tell, ye Sons of light,
Angels, for yee behold him, and with songs
And choral symphonies, Day without Night,
Circle his Throne rejoycing, yee in Heav'n,
On Earth joyn all ye Creatures to extoll
Him first, him last, him midst, and without end.
Fairest of Starrs, last in the train of Night,

BOOK V. *Paradise Lost.* 121

If better thou belong not to the dawn,
 Sure pledge of day, that crownst the smiling Morn
 With thy bright Circlet, praise him in thy Spheare
 While day arises, that sweet hour of prime.
 Thou Sun, of this great World both eye and Soule,
 Acknowledge him thy Greater, sound his praise
 In thy eternal course, both when thou climbst,
 And when high Noon hast gaind, and when thou fallst.
 Moon, that now meetst the orient Sun, now fliest
 With the fixt Starrs, fixt in thir Orb that flies,
 And yee fivc other wandring Fires that move
 In mystic Dance not without Song, resound
 His praise, who out of Darknes call'd up Light,
 Aire, and ye Elements the eldest birth
 Of Natures womb, that in quaternion run
 Perpetual Circle, multiform; and mix
 And nourish all things, let your ceaseles change
 Varie to our great Maker still new praise.
 Ye Mists and Exhalations that now rise
 From Hill or steaming Lake, duskie or grey,
 Till the Sun paint your fleecie skirts with Gold,
 In honour to the Worlds great Author rise,
 Whether to deck with Clouds the uncolourd skie,
 Or wet the thirstie Earth with falling showers,
 Rising or falling still advance his praise.
 His praise ye Winds, that from four Quarters blow,
 Breath soft or loud; and wave your tops, ye Pines,
 With every Plant, in sign of Worship wave.
 Fountains and yee, that warble, as ye flow,
 Melodious murmurs, warbling tune his praise.
 Joyn voices all ye living Souls, ye Birds,
 That singing up to Heaven Gate ascend,
 Bear on your wings and in your notes his praise;
 Yee that in Waters glide, and yee that walk

The

The Earth, and stately tread, or slowly creep;
 Witness if I be silent, Morn or Eeven,
 To Hill, or Valley, Fountain, or fresh shade
 Made vocal by my Song, and taught his praise.
 Had universal Lord, be bounteous still
 To give us only good; and if the night
 Have gathered aught of evil or conceald,
 Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark.

So pray'd they innocent, and to thir thoughts
 Firm peace recoverd soon and wonted calm.
 On to thir mornings rural work they haste
 Among sweet dewes and flours; where any row
 Of Fruit-trees overwoodie reachd too farr
 Thir pamperd boughes, and needed hands to check
 Fruitless imbraces: or they led the Vine
 To wed her Elm; she spous'd about him twines
 Her marriageable arms, and with her brings
 Her downr th' adopted Clusters, to adorn
 His barren leaves. Them thus imploid beheld
 With pittie Heav'ns high King, and to him call'd
Raphael, the sociable Spirit, that deign'd
 To travel with *Tobias*, and secur'd
 His marriage with the seaventimes-wedded Maid.

Raphael, said hee, thou hear'st what stir on Earth
Satan from Hell scap't through the darksom Gulf
 Hath raisd in Paradise, and how disturbd
 This night the human pair, how he designs
 In them at once to ruin all mankind.
 Go therefore, half this day as friend with friend
 Converse with *Adam*, in what Bowre or shade
 Thou find'st him from the heat of Noon retir'd,
 To respite his day-labour with repast,
 Or with repose; and such discourse bring on,
 As may advise him of his happie state,

Hoppinels

BOOK V. *Paradise Lost.* 123

Happinefs in his power left free to will,
Left to his own free Will, his Will though free
Yet mutable; whence warne him to beware
He swerve not too secure: tell him withall
His danger, and from whom, what enemie
Late falln himself from Heav'n, is plotting now
The fall of others from like state of blifs;
By violence, no, for that shall be withstood,
But by deceit and lies; this let him know,
Least wilfully transgressing he pretend
Surprisal, unadmonisht, unforewarnd.

So spake th' Eternal Father, and fulfilld
All Justice: nor delaid the winged Saint
After his charge receivd; but from among
Thousand Celestial Ardors, where he stood
Vaild with his gorgeous wings, up springing light
Flew through the midst of Heav'n; th' angelic Quires
On each hand parting, to his speed gave way
Through all th' Empyrean road; till at the Gate
Of Heav'n arriv'd, the gate self-opens wide
On golden Hinges turning, as by work
Divine the sov'ran Architect had fram'd.
From hence, no cloud, or, to obstruct his sight,
Starr interpos'd, however small he sees,
Not unconform to other shining Globes,
Earth and the Gard'n of God, with Cedars crown'd
Above all Hills. As when by night the Glass
Of *Galileo*, less assur'd, observes
Imagind Lands and Regions in the Moon:
Or Pilot from amidst the *Cyclades*
Delos or *Samos* first appeering kenns
A cloudy spot. Down thither prone in flight
He speeds, and through the vast Ethereal Skie
Sailes between worlds and worlds, with steddie wing
Now

124 **Paradise Lost. Book V.**

Now on the polar windes, then with quick Fann
 Winnows the buxom Air ; till within soare
 Of Towring Eagles, to all the Fowles he seems
 A *Phenix*, gaz'd by all, as that sole Bird
 When to enshrine his reliques in the Sun's
 Bright Temple, to *Agyptian Theb's* he flies.
 At once on th' Eastern cliff of Paradise
 He lights, and to his proper shape returns
 A Seraph wingd ; six wings he wore, to shade
 His lineaments Divine ; the pair that clad
 Each shoulder broad, came mantling o're his brest
 With regal Ornament ; the middle pair
 Girt like a Starrie zone his waste, and round
 Skirted his loines and thighs with downie Gold
 And colours dipt in Heav'n ; the third his feet
 Shaddowd from either heele with featherd maile
 Skie-tinctur'd grain. Like *Maia's* son he stood,
 And shook his Plumes, that Heav'nly fragrance filld
 The circuit wide. Strait knew him all the Bands
 Of Angels under watch ; and to his state,
 And to his message high in honour rise ;
 For on som message high they guesd him bound.
 Thir glittering Tents he pasd, and now is come
 Into the blisful field, through Groves of Myrrhe,
 And flourishing Odours, Cassia, Nard, and Blame ;
 A Wilderness of sweets ; for Nature here
 Wantond as in her prime, and plaid at will
 Her Virgin Fancies, pouring forth more sweet,
 Wilde above Rule or Art : enormous blifs.
 Him through the spicie Forrest onward com
Adam discernd, as in the dore he sat
 Of his coole Bowre, while now the mounted Sun
 Shot down direct his fervid Raies to warme
 Earths inmost womb, more warmth then *Adam* needs ;
 And

BOOK V. *Paradise Lost.* 125

And *Eve* within, due at her hour prepar'd
For dinner savourie fruits, of taste to please
True appetite, and nor disrelish thirst
Of nectarous draughts between, from milkie stream,
Berrie or Grape: to whom thus *Adam* call'd.

Haste hither *Eve*, and worth thy sight behold
Eastward among those Trees, what glorious shape
Comes this way moving; seems another Morn
Ris'n on mid-noon; som great behest from Heav'n
To us perhaps he brings, and will voutsafe
This day to be our Guest. But goe with speed,
And what thy stores contain, bring forth and poure
Abundance, fit to honour and receive
Our Heav'nly stranger; well we may afford
Our givers thir own gifts, and large bestow
From large bestowd, where Nature multiplies
Her fertil growth, and by disburd'ning grows
More fruitful, which instructs us not to spare.

To whom thus *Eve*. *Adams*, earths hallowd mould
Of God inspir'd, small store will serve, where store,
All seasons, ripe for use hangs on the stalk;
Save what by frugal storing firmness gains
To nourish, and superfluous moist consumes:
But I will haste and from each bough and break,
Each Plant and jucieft Gourd will pluck such choise
To entertain our Angel guest, as hee
Beholding shall confess that here on Earth
God hath dispenst his bounties as in Heav'n.

So saying, with dispatchful looks in haste
She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent
What choise to chuse for delicacie best,
What order, so contriv'd as not to mix
Tastes, not well joynd, inelegant; but bring
Taste after taste upheld with kindliest change,

Bestirs

Bestirs her then, and from each tender stalk
 Whatever Earth all-bearing Mother yields
 In *India* East or West, or middle shoare
 In *Fonius* or the *Punic* Coast, or where
Alcinous reign'd, fruit of all kindes, in coate,
 Rough, or smooth rin'd, or bearded husk, or shell
 She gathers, Tribute large, and on the board
 Heaps with unsparing hand; for drink the Grape
 She crushes, inoffensive moult, and meathes
 From many a berrie, and from sweet kernels press
 She tempers dulcet creams, nor these to hold
 Wants her fit vessels pure, then strews the ground
 With Rose and Odours from the shrub unfum'd.
 Mean while our Primitive great Sire, to meet
 His god-like guest, walks forth, without more train
 Accompani'd then with his own compleat
 Perfections, in himself was all his state,
 More solemn then the tedious pomp that waits
 On Princes, when thir rich Retinue long
 Of Horses led, and Grooms besmeard with Gold
 Dazles the croud, and sets them all agape.
 Neerer his presence *Adam* though not awd,
 Yet with submits approach and reverence meek,
 As to a superior Nature, bowing low,
 Thus said, Native of Heav'n, for other place
 None can then Heav'n such glorious shape contain,
 Since by descending from the Thrones above,
 Those happie places thou hast deign'd a while
 To want, and honour these, vouchsafe with us
 Two onely, who yet by sov'ran gift possess
 This spacious ground, in yonder shady Bowre
 To rest, and what the Garden choicest bears
 To sit and taste, till this meridian heat
 Be over, and the Sun more coole decline.

When

BOOK V. *Paradise Lost.* 127

Whom thus the Angelic Vertue answerd milde,
Adam, I therefore came, nor art thou such
 Created, or such place hast here to dwell,
 As may not oft invite, though Spirits of Heav'n
 To visit thee; lead on then where thy Bowre
 Oreshades; for these mid-hours, till Evening rise
 I have at will. So to the Silvan Lodge
 They came, that like *Pomona's* Arbour smil'd
 With flourets deck't and fragrant smells; but *Eve*
 Undeck't, save with her self more lovely fair
 Then Wood-Nymph, or the fairest Goddess feign'd
 Of three that in Mount *Ida* naked strove,
 Stood to entertain her guest from Heav'n; no vail
 Shee needed, Vertue-proof, no thought infirm
 Alterd her cheek. On whom the Angel *Hails*
 Bestowd, the holy salutation us'd
 Long after to blest *Marie*, second *Eve*.

Haile Mother of Mankind, whose fruitful Womb
 Shall fill the World more numerous with thy Sons
 Then with these various fruits the Trees of God
 Have heap'd this Table. Rais'd of grassie turf
 Thir Table was, and mossie seats had round,
 And on her ample Square from side to side
 All *Autumn* pil'd, though *Spring* and *Autumn* here
 Danc'd hand in hand. A while discourse they hold;
 No fear lest Dinner coole; when thus began
 Our Authour. Heav'nly stranger, please to taste
 These bounties which our Nourisher, from whom
 All perfet good unmeasur'd out, descends,
 To us for food and for delight hath caus'd
 The Earth to yeeld; unfavourie food perhaps
 To spiritual Natures; only this I know,
 That one Celestial Father gives to all.

To

To whom the Angel: Therefore what he gives
 (Whose praise be ever sung) to man in part
 Spiritual, may of purest Spirits be found
 No ingrateful food: and food alike those pure
 Intelligential Substances require
 As doth your Rational; and both contain
 Within them every lower facultie
 Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste,
 Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate,
 And corporeal to incorporeal turn.
 For know, whatever was created, needs
 To be sustaind and fed; of Elements
 The grosser feeds the pure, Earth the Sea,
 Earth and the Sea feed Air, the Air those Fires
 Ethereal, and as lowest first the Moon;
 Whence in her visage round those spots, unpurg'd
 Vapours not yet into her substance turn'd.
 Nor doth the Moon no nourishment exhale
 From her moist Continent to higher Orbes.
 The Sun that light imparts to all, receives
 From all his alimential recompence
 In humid exhalations, and at Even
 Sups with the Ocean: though in Heaven the Trees
 Of life ambrosial frutage bear, and vines
 Yield Nectar, though from off the boughs each Morn
 We brush mellifluous Dewes, and find the ground
 Coverd with pearly grain: yet God hath here
 Varied his bounty so with new delights,
 As may compare with Heaven; and to taste
 Think not I shall be nice. So down they sat,
 And to thir viands fell, nor seemingly
 The Angel, nor in mist, the common gloss
 Of Theologians, but with keen dispatch
 Of real hunger, and concoctive heate

BOOK VI. *Paradise Lost.* 129

To transubstantiate; what redounds, transpires
Through Spirits with ease; nor wonder; if by fire
Of sooty coal the Empiric Alchymist
Can turn, or holds it possible to turn
Metals of drossiest Ore to perfect Gold
As from the Mine. Mean while at Table Eve
Ministerd naked, and thir flowing cups
With pleasant liquors crown'd: O innocence
Deserving Paradise! if ever, then,
Then had the Sons of God excuse to have bin
Enamour'd at that sight; but in those hearts
Love unlibidinous reign'd, nor jealousy
Was understood, the injur'd Lovers Hell.

Thus when with meats and drinks they had suffic'd,
Not burd'nd Nature, sudden mind arose
In Adam, not to let th' occasion pass
Given him by this great Conserence to know
Of things above this World, and of thir being
Who dwell in Heav'n, whose excellence he saw
Transcend his own so farr, whose radiant forms
Divine effulgence, whose high Power so far
Exceeded human, and his wary speech
Thus to th' Empyrean Minister he fram'd.

Inhabitant with God, now know I well
Thy favour, in this honour done to man,
Under whose lowly roof thou hast voutsaf'd
To enter, and these earthly fruits to taste,
Food not of Angels, yet accepted so,
As that more willingly thou couldst not seem
At Heav'n's high feast to have fed: yet what compare?

To whom the winged Hierarch reply'd.
O Adam, one Almighty is, from whom
All things proceed, and up to him return,
If not deprav'd from good, created all
Such to perfection, one first matter all,

K

Indu'd

Indu'd with various forms, various degrees
 Of substance, and in things that live, of life;
 But more refin'd, more spiritous, and pure,
 As neerer to him plac't or neeter tending
 Each in thir severall active Sphears assign'd,
 Till body up to spirit work, in bounds
 Proportion'd to each kind. So from the root
 Springs lighter the green stalk, from thence the leaves
 More aerie, last the bright consummate floure
 Spirits odorous breathes: flours and thir fruit
 Mans nourishment, by gradual scale sublim'd
 To vital Spirits aspire, to animal,
 To intellectual, give both life and sense,
 Fancie and Understanding, whence the Soule
 Reason receives, and Reason is her being,
 Discursive, or Intuitive; discourse
 Is ofttest yours, the latter most is ours,
 Differing but in degree, of kind the same.
 Wonder not then, what God for you saw good
 If I refuse not, but convert, as you,
 To proper substance; time may come when men
 With Angels may participate, and find
 No inconvenient Diet, nor too light Fare:
 And from these corporal nutriments perhaps
 Your bodies may at last turn all to Spirit,
 Improv'd by tract of time, and wing'd ascend
 Ethereal, as wee, or may at choice
 Here or in Heav'nly Paradises dwell;
 If ye be found obedient, and retain
 Unalterably firm his love entire
 Whose Progenie you are. Mean while enjoy
 Your fill what happiness this happie state
 Can comprehend, incapable of more.

To whom the Patriarch of mankind repli'd,
 O favourable spirit, propitious Guest,

Well

Book V. **Paradise Lost.** 131

Well hast thou taught the way that might direct
 Our knowledge, and the scale of Nature set
 From center to circumference, whereon
 In contemplation of created things
 By steps we may ascend to God. But say,
 What meant that caution joind, *if ye be found*
Obedient ? can we want obedience then
 To him, or possibly his love desert
 Who form'd us from the dust, and plac'd us here
 Full to the utmost measure of what bliss
 Human desires can seek or apprehend ?
 To whom the Angel. Son of Heav'n and Earth,
 Attend : That thou art happie, owe to God ;
 That thou continu'st such, owe to thy self,
 That is, to thy obedience ; therein stand.
 His was that caution giv'n thee ; be advis'd.
 God made thee perfect, not immutable ;
 And good he made thee, but to persevere
 He left it in thy power, ordain'd thy will
 By nature free, not over-rul'd by Fate
 Inflexible, or strict necessity,
 For voluntarie service he requires,
 Not our necessitated, such with him
 Finds no acceptance, nor can find, for how
 In hearts, not free, be tri'd whether they serve
 Willing or no, who will but what they must
 Destinie, and can no other choose ?
 Thy self and all th' Angelic Host that stand
 In sight of God enthron'd, our happie state
 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds ;
 No other surety none ; freely we serve,
 Because we freely love, as in our will
 To love or not ; in this we stand or fall ;
 Some are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n,
 And so from Heav'n to deepest Hell ; O fall

Well

From what high state of blis into what woe !
To whom our great Progenitor. Thy words
Attentive, and with more delightful care,
Divine instructer, I have heard, then when
Cherubic Songs by night from neighbouring Hills
Aereal Music send : nor knew I not
To be both Will and Deed created free ;
Yet that we never shall forget to love
Our Maker, and obey him whose command
Single, is yet so just, my constant thoughts
Assur'd me, and still assure : though what thou tell'st
Hath past in Heav'n, some doubt within me move,
But more desire to hear, if thou consent,
The full relation, which must needs be strange,
Worthy of sacred silence to be heard ;
And we have yet large day, for scarce the Sun
Hath finish't half his journey, and scarce begins
His other half in the great Zone of Heav'n.

Thus *Adam* made request, and *Raphael*
After short pause assenting, thus began.

High matter thou injoinst me, O prime of men,
Sad task and hard, for how shall I relate
To human sense th' invisible exploits
Of warring Spirits ; how without remorse
The ruin of so many glorious once
And perst while they stood ; how last unfould
The secrets of another world, perhaps
Not lawful to reveal ? yet for thy good
This is dispenc't, and what surmounts the reach
Of human sense, I shall delineate so,
By lik'ning spiritual to corporal forms,
As may express them best, though what if Earth
Be but the shaddow of Heav'n, and things therein
Each to other like, more then on Earth is thought ?

As yet this world was not, and *Chaos* wilde

Reign

V. **BOOK V. Paradise Lost.** 133

Reignd where these Heav'ns now rowl, where Earth
 Upon her Center pois'd, when on a day (now rests
 (For time, though in Eternitie, appli'd
 To motion, measures all things durable
 By present, past, and future) on such day
 As Heav'ns great Year brings forth, th' Empyreal Host
 Of Angels by Imperial Summons call'd,
 Innumerable before th' Almightyes Throne
 Forth with from all the ends of Heav'n appeerd
 Under thir Hierarchs in orders bright
 Ten thousand thousand Ensignes high advanc'd,
 Standards, and Gonfalons twixt Van and Reare
 Streame in the Aire, and for distinction serve
 Of Hierarchies, of Orders, and Degrees;
 Or in thir glittering Tissues bear imblaz'd
 Holy Memorials, acts of Zeale and Love
 Recorded eminent. Thus when in Orbes
 Of circuit inexpressible they stood,
 Orb within Orb, the Father infinite,
 By whom in blifs imbosom'd sat the Son,
 Amidst as from a flaming Mount, whose top
 Brightness had made invisible, thus spake.

Hear all ye Angels, Progenie of Light,
 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Vertues, Powers,
 Hear my Decree, which unrevok't shall stand.
 This day I have begot whom I declare
 My onely Son, and on this holy Hill
 Him have anointed, whom ye now behold
 At my right hand; your Head I him appoint;
 And by my Self have sworn to him shall bow
 All knees in Heav'n, and shall confesse him Lord:
 Under his great Vice-gerent Reign abide
 United as one individual Soule
 For ever happie: him who disobeyes
 Me disobeyes, breaks union, and that day

Cast out from God and blessed vision, falls
 Into utter darkness, deep ingulft, his place
 Ordaind without redemption, without end.

So spake th' Omnipotent, and with his words
 All seemd well pleas'd, all seem'd, but were not all
 That day, as other solemn dayes, they spent
 In song and dance about the sacred Hill,
 Mystical dance, which yonder starrie Spheare
 Of Planets and of fixt in all her Wheelles
 Resembles nearest, mazes intricate,
 Eccentric, intervolv'd, yet regular
 Then most, when most irregular they seem,
 And in thir motions harmonie Divine
 So smooths her charming tones, that Gods own ear
 Listens delighted. Eevning now approach'd
 (For wee have also our Eevning and our Morn,
 Wee ours for change delectable, not need)
 Forthwith from dance to sweet repast they turn
 Desirous ; all in Circles as they stood,
 Tables are set, and on a sudden pil'd
 With Angels Food, and rubied Nectar flows
 In Pearl, in Diamond, and massie Gold,
 Fruit of delicious Vines, the growth of Heav'n.
 On flours repos'd, and with fresh flourets crown'd,
 They eat, they drink, and in communion sweet
 Quaff immortalitie and joy, secure
 Of surfet where full measure onely bounds
 Excess, before th' all bounteous King, who shew'd
 With copious hand, rejoycing in thir joy.
 Now when ambrosial Night which Clouds exhald
 From that high mount of God, whence light & shade
 Spring both, the face of brightest Heav'n had chang'd
 To grateful Twilight (for Night comes not there
 In darker veile) and roseat Dews dispos'd
 All but the unsleeping eyes of God to rest,

Wide over all the Plain, and wider farr
 Then all this globous Earth in Plain outspred,
 (Such are the Courts of God) Th' Angelic throng
 Disperst in Bands and Files thir Camp extend
 By living Streams among the Trees of Life,
 Pavilions numberless, and sudden reard,
 Celestial Tabernacles, where they slept
 Fannd with cool Winds, save those who in thir course
 Melodious Hymns about the sovran Throne
 Alternate all night long: but not so wak'd
Satan, so call him now, his former name
 Is heard no more in Heav'n; he of the first,
 If not the first Arch-Angel, great in Power,
 In favour and præminence, yet fraught
 With envie against the Son of God, that day
 Honour'd by his grear Father, and proclaim'd
Messiah King anointed, could not beare
 Through pride that sight, & thought himself impair'd.
 Deep malice thence conceiving and disdain,
 Soon as midnight brought on the duskie houre
 Friendliest to sleep and silence, he resolv'd
 With all his Legions to dislodge and leave
 Unworshipt, unbey'd the Throne supream
 Contemptuous, and his next subordinate
 Awak'ning, thus to him in secret spake.

Sleepest thou Companion dear, what sleep can close
 Thy eye-lids? and remembrest what Decree
 Of yesterday, so late hath past the lips
 Of Heav'n's Almightye. Thou to me thy thoughts
 Wast wont, I mine to thee was wont to impart;
 Both waking we were one; how then can now
 Thy sleep dissent; new Laws thou seest impos'd;
 New Laws from him who reigns, new minds may raise
 In us who serve, new Counsels, to debate
 What doubtful may ensue, more in this place

To utter is not safe: Assemble thou
 Of all those Myriads which we lead the Chiefs;
 Tell them that by command, ere yet dim Night
 Her shadowie Cloud withdraws, I am robaſte,
 And all who under me thir Banners wave,
 Homeward with flying march where we poſſeſs
 The Quarters of the North, there to prepare
 Fit entertainment to receive our King
 The great *Meſſiah*, and his new commands,
 Who ſpeedily through all the Hierarchies
 Intends to paſs triumphant and give Laws.

So ſpake the falſe Arch-Angel, and infus'd
 Bad influence into th' unwarie breaſt
 Of his Associate; hee together calls,
 Or ſeveral one by one, the Regent Powers,
 Under him Regent, tells, as he was taught,
 That the moſt High commanding, now ere Night,
 Now ere dim Night had diſtinctberd Heav'n,
 The great Hierarchal Standard was to move;
 Tells the ſuggeſted cauſe, and caſts between
 Ambiguous words and jealousies to found
 Or taint integritie; but all obey'd
 The wonted ſignal, and ſuperior voice
 Of this great Potentate; for great indeed
 His name, and high was his degree in Heav'n;
 His count'nance, as the Morning Starr that guides
 The ſtarrie flock, allur'd them, and with lies
 Drew after him the third part of Heav'n's Hoſt:
 Mean while th' Eternal eye, whoſe ſight diſcernes
 Abſtruſeſt thoughts from forth his holy Mount
 And from within the golden Lamps that burne
 Nightly before him, ſaw without thir light
 Rebellion riſing, ſaw in whom, how ſpread
 Among the ſons of Morn, what multitudes
 Were banded to oppoſe his high Decree;

And

And smiling to his only Son thus said.

Son, thou in whom my glory I behold
In full resplendence, Heir of all my might,
Nearer it now concerns us to be sure
Of our Omnipotence, and with what Arms
We mean to hold what anciently we claim
Of Deitie or Empire, such a foe
Is rising, who intends to erect his Throne
Equal to ours, throughout the spacious North;
Nor so content, hath in his thought to try
In Battle, what our Power is, or our right.
Let us advise, and to this hazard draw
With speed what force is left, and all employ
In our defence, lest unawares we lose
This our high place, our Sanctuarie, our Hill.

To whom the Son with calm aspect and cleer
Light'ning Divine, ineffable, serene,
Made answer. Mighty Father, thou thy foes
Justly hast in derision, and secure
Laugh'st at thir vain designs and tumults vain,
Matter to mee of Glory, whom thir hate
Illustrates, when they see all Regal Power
Giv'n me to quell thir pride, and in event
Know whether I be dextrous to subdue
Thy Rebels, or be found the worst in Heav'n.

So spake the Son, but Satan with his Powers
Far was advanc't on winged speed, an Host
Innumerable as the Stars of Night,
Or Stars of Morning, Dew-drops, which the Sun
Impearls on every leaf and every flower.
Regions they pass'd, the mighty Regencies,
Of Seraphim and Potentates and Thrones
In thir triple Degrees, Regions to which
All thy Dominion, Adam, is no more
Then what this Garden is to all the Earth,

And

138 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK V.

And all the Sea, from one entire globe
 Stretcht into Longitude; which having pass'd
 At length into the limits of the North
 They came, and *Satan* to his Royal seat
 High on a Hill, far blazing, as a Mount
 Rais'd on a Mount, with Pyramids and Towers
 From Diamond Quarries hew'n, and Rocks of Gold,
 The Palace of great *Lucifer*, (so call
 That Structure in the Dialect of men
 Interpreted) which not long after, he
 Affecting all equality with God,
 In imitation of that Mount whereon
Messiah was declar'd in sight of Heav'n,
The Mountain of the Congregation call'd;
 For thither he assembl'd all his Train,
 Pretending so commanded to consult
 About the great reception of thir King,
 Thither to come, and with calumnious Art
 Of counterfeted truth thus held thir eares.
 Thrones, Dominations, Princedomes, Vertues, Pow-
 If these magnific Titles yet remain
 Not meerly titular, since by Decree
 Another now hath to himself ingros't
 All Power, and us eclips'd under the name
 Of King anointed, for whom all this haste
 Of midnight march, and hurried meeting here,
 This onely to consult how we may best
 With what may be devis'd of honours new
 Receive him coming to receive from us
 Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile,
 Too much to one, but double how endur'd,
 To One and to his Image now proclaim'd?
 But what if better counsels might erect
 Our minds and teach us to cast off this Yoke?
 Will ye submit your necks, and chuse to bend

The

BOOK VI. *Paradise Lost*. 139

The supple knee? ye will not, if I trust
To know ye right, or if ye know your selves
Natives and Sons of Heav'n posselt before
By none, and if not equal all, yet free,
Eqdally free; for Orders and Degrees
Jarr not with liberty, but well consist.
Who can in reason then or right assume
Monarchie over such as live by right
His equals, if in power and splendor less,
In freedome equal? or can introduce
Law and Edict on us, who without Law
Erre not, much less for this to be our Lord,
And look for adoration to th' abuse
Of those Imperial Titles which assert
Our being ordain'd to govern, not to serve?

Thus farr his bold discourse without controule
Had audience, when among the Seraphim
Abdiel, then whom none with more zeale ador'd
The Deitie, and divine commands obeid,
Stood up, and in a flame of zeale severe
The current of his fury thus oppos'd.

O argument blasphemous, false and proud!
Words which no eare ever to hear in Heav'n
Expected, least of all from thee, ingrate
In place thy self so high above thy Peeres.
Canst thou with impious obloquie condemne
The just Decree of God, pronounc't and sworn,
That to his only Son by right endu'd
With Regal Scepter, every Soule in Heav'n
Shall bend the knee, and in that honour due
Confess him rightful King? unjust thou saist
Flatly unjust, to bind with Laws the free,
And equal over equals to let Reigne,
One over all with unsucceeded power.
Shalt thou give Law to God, shalt thou dispute

With

With him the points of libertie, who made
 Thee what thou art, and form'd the Pow'rs of Heav'n
 Such as he pleas'd, and circumscrib'd thir being?
 Yet by experience taught we know how good,
 And of our good, and of our dignitie
 How provident he is, how farr from thought
 To make us less, bent rather to exalt
 Our happie state under one Head more neer
 United. But to grant it thee unjust,
 That equal over equals Monarch Reign;
 Thy self though great and glorious dost thou count,
 Or all Angelic Nature joind in one,
 Equal to him begotten Son, by whom
 As by his Word the mighty Father made
 All things, ev'n thee, and all the Spirits of Heav'n
 By him created in thir bright degrees,
 Crownd them with Glory, and to thir Glory nam'd
 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Vertues, Powers,
 Essential Powers, nor by his Reign obscur'd,
 But more illustrious made, since he the Head
 One of our number thus reduc't becomes,
 His Laws our Laws, all honour to him done
 Returns our own. Cease then this impious rage,
 And tempt not these; but hast'n to appease
 Th' incens'd Father, and th' incens'd Son,
 While Pardon may be found in time besought.

So spake the fervent Angel, but his zeale
 None seconded, as out of season judg'd,
 Or singular and rash, whereat rejoic'd
 Th' Apostat, and more haughty thus repli'd.
 That we were form'd then saist thou? and the work
 Of secondarie hands, by task transfer'd
 From Father to his Son? strange point and new!
 Doctrin which we would know whence learnt: who
 When this creation was? rememberst thou

(saw
 Thy

BOOK V. *Paradise Lost.* 141

Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being?
 We know no time when we were not as now;
 Know none before us self-begot, self-rai'd
 By our own quick'ning power, when fatal course
 Had circl'd his full Orbe, the birth mature
 Of this our native Heav'n, Ethereal Sons.
 Our puissance is our own, our own right hand
 Shall teach us highest deeds, by proof to try
 Who is our equal : then thou shalt behold
 Whether by supplication we intend
 Address, and to begirt th' Almighty Throne
 Beseeching or besieging. This report,
 These tidings carrie to th' anointed King;
 And fly, ere evil intercept thy flight.

He said, and as the sound of waters deep
 Hoarse murmur echo'd to his words applause
 Through the infinite Host; nor less for that
 The flaming Seraph fearless, though alone
 Encompass'd round with foes, thus answer'd bold.

O alienate from God, O spirit accurst,
 Forsak'n of all good; I see thy fall
 Determind, and thy hapless crew involv'd
 In this perfidious fraud, contagion spread
 Both of thy crime and punishment : henceforth
 No more be troubl'd how to quit the yoke
 Of Gods *Messiah*; those indulgent Laws
 Will not be now voutsaf't, other Decrees
 Against thee are gon forth without recall;
 That Golden Scepter which thou didst reject,
 Is now an Iron Rod to bruise and breake
 Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise,
 Yet not for thy advise or threats I fly
 These wicked Tents devoted, least the wrauth
 Impendent, raging into sudden flame
 Distinguish not: for soon expect to feel

His

His Thunder on thy head, devouring fire.
Then who created thee lamenting learne,
When who can uncreate thee thou shalt know.

So spake the Seraph *Abdiel* faithful found,
Among the faithles, faithful only hee ;
Among innumerable false, unmov'd,
Unshak'n, unseduc'd, unterrifi'd
His Loyaltie he kept, his Love, his Zeale ;
Nor number, nor example with him wrought
To swerve from truth, or change his constant mind
Though single. From amidst them forth he passd,
Long way through hostile scorn, which he susteind
Superior, nor of violence fear'd aught ;
And with retorted scorn his back he turn'd
On those proud Towrs to swift destruction doom'd,

The End of the Fifth Book.

Paradise Lost.

BOOK VI.

THE ARGUMENT.

Raphael continues to relate how Michael and Gabriel were sent forth to battel against Satan and his Angels. The first Fight describ'd : Satan and his Powers retire under Night : He calls a Councel, invents devilish Engines, which in the second dayes Fight put Michael and his Angels to some disorder ; but they at length pulling up Mountains overwhelm'd both the force and Machins of Satan : Yet the Tumult not so ending, God on the third day sends Messiah his Son, for whom he had reserv'd the glory of that Victory : Hee in the Power of his Father coming to the place, and causing all his Legions to stand still on either side, with his Chariot and Thunder driving into the midst of his Enemies, pursues them unable to resist towards the wall of Heaven ; which opening, they leap down with horreur and confusion into the place of punishment prepar'd for them in the Deep : Messiah returns with triumph to his Father.

ALL

144 *Paradise Lost.* Book VI.

ALL night the dreadful Angel unpursu'd
 Through Heav'n's wide Champain held his
 (way, till Morn,
 Wak't by the circling hours, with roſie hand
 Unbarr'd the Gates of Light. There is a Cave
 Within the Mount of God, faſt by his Throne,
 Where Light and Darkneſs in perpetual round
 Lodge and diſlodge by turns, which makes through
 Grateful viciffitude, like Day and Night; (Heav'n
 Light iſſues forth, and at the other dore
 Obſequious darkneſs enters, till her houre (well
 To veile the Heav'n, though darkneſs there might
 Seem twilight here; and now went forth the Morn
 Such as in higheſt Heav'n, arrayd in Gold
 Emphyreal, from before her vaniſht Night,
 Shot through with orient Beams: when all the Plain
 Coverd with thick embattel'd Squadrons bright,
 Chariots and flaming Armes, and fiery Steeds
 Reflecting blaze on blaze, firſt met his view:
 Warr he perceav'd, warr in procinct, and found
 Already known what he for news had thought
 To have reported: gladly then he mixt
 Among thoſe friendly Powers who him receav'd
 With joy and acclamations loud, that one
 That of ſo many Myriads fall'n, yet one
 Return'd not loſt: On to the ſacred hill
 They led him high applauded, and preſent
 Before the Seat ſupream; from whence a voice
 From miſt a Golden Cloud thus milde was heard.
 Servant of God, well done, well haſt thou fought
 The better fight, who ſingle haſt maintain'd
 Againſt revolted multitudes the Cauſe
 Of Truth, in word mightier then they in Armes;
 And for the teſtimony of Truth haſt born

Univerſal

BOOK VI. *Paradise Lost*. 145

Universal reproach, far worse to bear;
 Then violence: for this was all thy care
 To stand approv'd in sight of God, though Worlds
 Judg'd thee perverse: the eastern conquest now
 Remains thee, aided by this host of friends,
 Back on thy foes more glorious to return
 Then scornd thou didst depart; and to subdue
 By force, who reason for thir Law refuse,
 Right reason for thir Law, and for thir King
Messiah, who by right of merit Reigns
 Go *Michael* of Celestial Armies Prince,
 And thou in Military prowess next
Gabriel, lead forth to Battel these my Sons
 Invincible, lead forth my Saints
 By Thousands and by Millions rang'd for fight,
 Equal in number to that Godless crew
 Rebellious, them with fire and hostile Arms
 Fearless assault, and to the brow of Heav'n
 Pursuing drive them out from God and bliss,
 Into thir place of punishment, the Gulf
 Of *Tartarus*, which ready opens wide
 His fiery Chasm to receive thir fall.
 So spake the Sovran voice, and Clouds began
 To darken all the Hill, and frigate to rowl
 In duskie wreathes, reluctant flames, the signe
 Of wrath awak'd: nor with less dread the sound
 Ethereal Trumpet from on high gan blow:
 At which command the Powers Militant
 That stood for Heav'n, in mighty Quadrate joyn'd
 Of Union irresistible, mov'd on
 In silence thir bright Legions, to the sound
 Of instrumental Harmonie that breath'd
 Heroic Ardor to advent'rous deeds
 Under thir God-like Leaders, in the Cause

Of God and his *Messiah*. On they move
 Indissolubly firm; nor obvious Hill,
 Nor streit'ning Vale, nor Wood, nor Stream divides
 Thir perfect ranks; for high above the ground
 Thir march was, and the passive Air upbore
 Thir nimble tread, as when the total kind
 Of Birds in orderly array on wing
 Came summon'd over *Eden* to receive
 Thir names of thee; so over many a tract
 Of Heav'n they march'd, and many a Province wide
 Tenfold the length of this terrene: at last
 Farr in th' Horizon to the North appear'd
 From skirt to skirt a fierie Region, stretcht
 In battailous aspect, and neerer view
 Bristl'd with upright beams innumerable
 Of rigid Spears, and Helmets throng'd, and Shields
 Various, with boastful Argument portraid,
 The banded Powers of *Satan* hastning on
 With furious expedition; for they weend
 That self same day by fight, or by surprize
 To win the Mount of God, and on his Throne
 To set the envier of his State, the proud
 Aspirer, but thir thoughts prov'd fond and vain
 In the mid way: though strange to us it seem'd
 At first, that Angel should with Angel warr,
 And in fierce hosting meet, who wont to meet
 So oft in Festivals of joy and love
 Unanimous, as sons of one great Sire
 Hymning th' Eternal Father: but the shout
 Of Battel now began, and rushing sound
 Of onset ended soon each milder thought.]
 High in the midst exalted as a God
 Th' Apostat in his Sun-bright Chariot fate
 Idol of Majestie Divine, enclos'd

BOOK VI. *Paradise Lost.* 8147

With Flaming Cherubim, and golden Shields;
Then lighted from his gorgeous Throne, for now
Twixt Host and Host but narrow space was left,
A dreadful intervall, and Front to Front
Presented stood in terrible array
Of hideous length: before the cloudie Van,
On the rough edge of battel ere it joyn'd,
Satan with vast and haughtie strides advanc't,
Came towring, arm'd in Adamant and Gold;
Abdiel that sight endur'd not, where he stood
Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,
And thus his own undaunted heart explores.

O Heav'n! that such resemblance of the Highest
Should yet remain, where faith and realtie
Remain not; wherefore should not strength and might
There fail where Vertue fails, or weakest prove
Where boldest; though to fight unconquerable?
His puissance, trusting in th' Almighty's aide,
I mean to try, whose Reason I have tri'd
Unsound and false; nor is it aught but just,
That he who in debate of Truth hath won,
Should win in Arms, in both disputes alike
Victor; though brutish that contest and foule,
When Reason hath to deal with force, yet so
Most reason is that Reason overcome.

So pondering, and from his armed Peers
Forth stepping opposite, half way he met
His daring foe, at this prevention more
Incens'd, and thus securely him defi'd.

Proud, art thou met? thy hope was to have reacht
The highth of thy aspiring unoppos'd,
The Throne of God unguarded, and his side
Abandon'd at the terror of thy Power
Or potent tongue; fool, not to think how vain

Against th' Omnipotent to rise in Arms ;
Who out of smallest things could without end
Have rais'd incessant Armies to defeat
Thy folly ; or with solitarie hand
Reaching beyond all limit at one blow
Unaided could have finish't thee, and whelm'd
Thy Legions under darkness ; but thou seest
All are not of thy Train ; there be who Faith
Prefer, and Pietie to God, though then
To thee not visible, when I alone
Seem'd in thy World erroneous to dissent
From all : my Sect thou seest, now learn too late
How few sometimes may know, when thousands err
Whom the grand foe with scornful eye askance
Thus answerd. Ill for thee, but in wisht houre
Of my revenge, first sought for thou return'st
From flight, seditious Angel, to receive
Thy merited reward, the first assay
Of this right hand provok't, since first that tongue
Inspir'd with contradiction durst oppose
A third part of the Gods, in Synod met
Thir Deities to assert, who while they feel
Vigour Divine within them, can allow
Omnipotence to none. But well thou com'st
Before thy fellows, ambitious to win
From me som Plume, that thy success may show
Destruction to the rest : this pause between
(Unanswerd least thou boast) to let thee know ;
At first I thought that Libertie and Heav'n
To heav'nly Soules had bin all one ; but now
I see that most through sloth had rather serve,
Ministring Spirits, train'd up in Feast and Song ;
Such hast thou arm'd, the Minstrellie of Heav'n,
Servilitie with freedom to contend,

As both thir deeds compar'd this day shall prove
 To whom in brief thus *Abdiel* stern repli'd:
 Apostat, still thou err'st, nor end wilt find
 Of erring; from the path of truth remote:
 Unjustly thou depriv'st it with the name
 Of *Servitude* to serve whom God ordains,
 Or Nature; God and Nature bid the same,
 When he who rules is worthiest, and excels
 Them whom he governs. This is servitude,
 To serve th' unwise, or him who hath rebelld
 Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee,
 Thy self not free, but to thy self enthrall'd:
 Yet leudly dar'st our ministring upbraid.
 Reign thou in Hell thy Kingdom, let mee serve
 In Heav'n God ever blest, and his Divine
 Behests obey, worthiest to be obey'd,
 In Chains in Hell, not Realms expect: mean while
 From mee return'd, as erst thou saidst, from flight,
 This greeting on thy impious Crest receive.

So saying, a noble stroke he list'd high,
 Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell
 On the proud Crest of *Satan*, that no sight,
 Nor motion of swift thought, less could his Shield
 Such ruin intercept: ten paces huge
 He back recoild; the tenth on bended knee
 His massie Spear upstaid; as if on Earth
 Winds under ground or waters forcing way
 Sidelong, had push'd a Mountain from his seat
 Half sunk with all his Pines. Amazement seisd
 The Rebel Thrones; but greater rage to see
 Thus foil'd thir mightiest, ours joy filld, and shout,
 Release of Victorie and fierce desire
 Of Battel: whereat *Michael* bid sound
 The Arch-Angel trumpet; through the vast of Heav'n

It sounded, and the faithful Armies rung
Hosanna to the Highest : nor stood at gaze
 The adverse Legions, nor less hideous joyn'd
 The horrid shock : now storming furie rose,
 And clamour such as heard in Heav'n till now
 Was never, Arms on Armour clashing bray'd
 Horrible discord, and the madding Wheels
 Of brazen Chariots rag'd ; dire was the noise
 Of conflict ; over head the dismal hiss
 Of fiery Darts in flaming volies flew,
 And flying vaulted either Host with fire.
 So under fierie Cope together rush'd
 Both Battels maine, with ruinous assault
 And inextinguishable rage ; all Heav'n
 Resounded, and had Earth bin then, all Earth
 Had to her Center shook. What wonder ? when
 Millions of fierce encountring Angels fought
 On either side, the least of whom could weild
 These Elements, and arm him with the force
 Of all thir Regions : how much more of Power
 Armie against Armie numberless to raise
 Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb,
 Though not destroy, thir happie Native seat ;
 Had not th' Eternal King Omnipotent
 From his strong hold of Heav'n high over-rul'd
 And limited thir might ; though numberd such
 As each divided Legion might have seemd
 A numerous Host, in strength each armed hand
 A Legion, led in fight, yet Leader seemd
 Each Warriour single as in Chief, expert
 When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway
 Of Battel, open when, and when to close
 The ridges of grim Warr ; no thought of flight,
 None of retreat, no unbecoming deed

That argu'd fear; each on himself fell'd,
As onely in his arm the moment lay
Of victorie; deeds of eternal fame
Were don, but infinite: for wide was spread
That Warr and various; sometimes on firm ground
A standing fight, then soaring on main wing
Tormented all the Air; all Air seem'd then
Conflicting Fire: long time in eeven scale
The Battel hung; till *Satan*, who that day
Prodigious power had shewn, and met in Armes
No equal, raunging through the dire attack
Of fighting Seraphim confus'd, at length
Saw where the Sword of *Michael* smote, and fell'd
Squadrons at once, with huge two-handed sway
Brandisht aloft the horrid edge came down
Wide wasting; such destruction to withstand
He hasted, and oppos'd the rockie Orb
Of tenfold Adamant, his ample Shield
A vast circumference: At his approach
The great Arch-Angel from his warlike toile
Surceas'd, and glad as hoping here to end
Intestine War in Heav'n, the arch foe subdu'd
Or Captive drag'd in Chains, with hostile frown
And visage all enflam'd first thus began.

Author of evil, unknown till thy revolt,
Innam'd in Heav'n, now plenteous, as thou seest
These Acts of hateful strife, hateful to all,
Though heaviest by just measure on thy self
And thy adherents: how hast thou disturb'd
Heav'n's blessed peace, and into Nature brought
Miserie, uncreated till the crime
Of thy Rebellion; how hast thou instill'd
Thy malice into thousands, once upright
And faithful, now prov'd false. But thinks not here

To trouble Holy Rest; Heav'n casts thee out
 From all the Confiners. Heav'n the seat of bliss
 Brooks not the works of violence and Warr
 Hence then, and evil go with thee along
 Thy offspring, to the place of evil, Hell.
 Thou and thy wicked crew; there mingle broiles,
 Ere this avenging Sword begin thy doome,
 Or some more sudden vengeance wing'd from God
 Precipitate thee with augmented paine.

So spake the Prince of Angels; to whom thus
 The Adversarie. Nor think thou with wind
 Of airie threats to aw whom yet with deeds
 Thou canst not. Hast thou turn'd the least of these
 To flight, or if to fall, but that they rise
 Unvanquisht, easier to transact with mee
 That thou shouldst hope, imperious, and with threats
 To chase me hence? erre not that so shall end
 The strife which thou call'st evil, but wee style
 The strife of Glorie, which we mean to win,
 Or turn this Heav'n it self into the Hell
 Thou fablest, here however to dwell free,
 If not to reign; mean while thy utmost force,
 And join him nam'd *Almighty* to thy aid,
 I flie not, but have sought thee farr and nigh.

They ended parle, and both addrest for fight
 Unspeakable; for who, though with the tongue
 Of Angels, can relate, or to what things
 Liken on Earth conspicuous, that may lift
 Human imagination to such highth
 Of Godlike Power: for like Gods they seem'd,
 Stood they or mov'd, in stature, motion, arms
 Fit to decide the Empire of great Heav'n.
 Now wav'd thir fierie Swords, and in the Aire
 Made horrid Circles; two broad Suns thir Shields
 Blaz'd

BOOK VI. *Paradise Lost.* 133

Met opposite, while expectation stood
 In horror; from each hand with speed retir'd
 Where erst was thickest fight, th' Angelic throng,
 And left large field, unsafe within the wind
 Of such commotion, such as to set forth
 Great things by small, If Natures concord broke,
 Among the Constellations warr were sprung,
 Two Planets rushing from aspect maligne
 Of fiercest opposition in mid Skie,
 Should combat, and jarring Sphears confound,
 Together both with next to Almighty Arme,
 Uplifted imminent one stroke they aim'd
 That might determin, and not need repeate,
 As not of power at once; nor odds appeerd
 In might or swift prevention; but the Sword
 Of *Michael* from the Armorie of God
 Was giv'n him temper'd so, that neither keen
 Nor solid might resist that edge: it met
 The sword of *Satan* with steep force to smite
 Descending, and in haf cut sheere, nor staid,
 But with swift wheele reverse, deep entering shar'd
 All his right side; then *Satan* first knew pain,
 And writh'd him to and fro convolv'd; so forc
 The griding sword with discontinuous wound
 Pals'd through him, but th' Ethereal substance clos'd
 Not long divisible, and from the gash
 A stream of Nectarous humor issuing flow'd
 Sanguin, such as Celestial Spirits may bleed,
 And all his Armour stain'd ere while so bright.
 Forthwith on all sides to his aide was run
 By Angels many and strong, who interpos'd
 Defence, while others bore him on thir Shields
 Back to his Chariot; where it stood retir'd
 From off the files of warr; there they him laid
 Gnashing

Gnashing for anguish and despite and shame,
 To find himself not matchless, and his pride
 Humbl'd by such rebuke; so farr beneath
 His confidence to equal God in power.
 Yet soon he heal'd; for Spirits that live throughout
 Vital in every part; not as frail man
 In Entrails, Heart or Head, Liver or Reines;
 Cannot but by annihilating die;
 Nor in thir liquid texture mortal wound
 Receivg, no more then can the fluid Aire:
 All Heart they live, all Head, all Eye, all Eare;
 All Intellect, all Sense, and as they please,
 They Limb themselves, and colour shape or size
 Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare.

Meanwhile in other parts like deeds deservd
 Memorial, where the might of *Gabriel* fought,
 And with sictce Ensignes pierc'd the deep array
 Of *Moloch* furious King, who him defi'd,
 And at his Chariot wheelles to drag him bound
 Threatn'd, nor from the Holie One of Heav'n
 Refrain'd his tongue blasphemous; but anon
 Down clovn to the waste, with shatterd Armes
 And uncouth pain fled bellowing. On each wing
Uriel and *Raphael* his vaunting foe,
 Though huge, and in a Rock of Diamond Armd,
 Vanquish'd *Adramelec*, and *Asmadai*,
 Two potent Thrones, that to be less then Gods
 Disdain'd, but meaner thoughts learn'd in thir flight,
 Mangl'd with gashly wounds through Plate & Maile,
 Nor stood unmindful *Abdiel* to annoy
 The Atheist crew, but with redoubl'd blow
Ariel and *Arioc*, and the violence
 Of *Raniel* scorcht and blasted overthrow.
 I might relate of thousands, and thir names

Eternize

BOOK VI. Paradise Lost? 135

Eternize here on Earth ; but those elect
 Angels contented with thir fame in Heav'n
 Seek not the praise of men : the other sort
 In might though wondrous and in Acts of Warr,
 Nor of Renown less eager, yet by doome
 Canceld from Heav'n and sacred memorie,
 Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell,
 For strength from Truth divided and from Just,
 Illaudable, naught merits but dispraise
 And ignominie, yet to glorie aspires
 Vain glorious, and through infamie seeks fame :
 Therefore Eternal silence be thir doome.

And now thir Mightiest quelld, the battel swerv'd,
 With many an inrode gor'd ; deformed rout
 Enter'd, and foul disorder ; all the ground
 With shiver'd armour strow'n, and on a heap
 Chariot and Charioter lay overturn'd
 And fierie foaming Steeds ; what stood, recoyld
 Oreweari'd, through the faint Satanic Host
 Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surpris'd,
 Then first with fear surpris'd and sense of paine
 Fled ignominious, to such evil brought
 By sin of disobedience, till that hour
 Not liable to fear or flight or paine,
 Far otherwise th' inviolable Saints
 In Cubic Phalanx firm advanc't entire,
 Invulnerable, impenitrably arm'd :
 Such high advantages thir innocence
 Gave them above thir foes, not to have sinn'd,
 Not to have disobey'd ; in fight they stood
 Unweari'd, unobnoxious to be pain'd
 By wound, though from thir place by violence mov'd.

Now Night her course began, and over Heav'n
 Inducing darkness, grateful truce impos'd,

And

156 **Paradise Lost. BOOK VI.**

And silence on the odious din of Warr:
Under her Cloudie covert both retir'd
Victor and Vanquish't: on the foughten field
Michael and his Angels prevalent
Encamping, plac't in Guard thir Watches round,
Cherubic waving fires: on th' other part
Satan with his rebellious disappeerd,
Far in the dark dislodg'd, and void of rest,
His Potentates to Councel call'd by night;
And in the midst thus undismaid began.

O now in danger tri'd, now known in Armes
Not to be overpowerd, Companions deare,
Pound worthy not of Libertie alone,
Too mean pretense, but what we more affect,
Honour, Dominion, Glorie, and renowe,
Who have sustaind one day in doubtful fight
(And if one day, why not Eternal dayes?)
What Heavens Lord had powerfullest to send
Against us from about his Throne, and judg'd
Sufficient to subdue us to his will,
But proves not so: then fallible, it seems
Of future we may deem him, though till now
Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly arm'd,
Some disadvantage we endur'd and paine,
Till now not known, but known as soon contemnd,
Since now we find this our Emphyreal form
Incapable of mortal injurie
Imperishable, and though peirc'd with wound
Soon closing, and by native vigour heal'd,
Of evil then so small as easie think
The remedie; perhaps more valid Armes,
Weapons more violent, when next we meet,
May serve to better us, and worse our foes,
Or equal what between us made the odds,

In

BOOK V. Paradise Lost. 857

In nature none : if other hidden cause
Left them Superiour, while we can preserve
Unhurt our mindes, and understanding sound,
Due search and consultation will disclose.

He sat, and in th' assembly next up stood
Nisroc, of Principalities the prime;
As one he stood escap't from cruel fight,
Sore toild, his riv'n Armes to havoc hewn,
And cloudie in aspect thus answering spake.
Deliverer from new Lords, leader to free
Enjoyment of our right as Gods; yet hard
For Gods, and too unequal work we find
Against unequal armes to fight in paine.
Against unpaid, impassive; from which evil
Ruin must needs ensue; for what avails
Valour or strength, though matchless, quell'd with pain
Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hands
Of Mightiest. Sense of pleasure we may well
Spare out of life perhaps, and not repine,
But live content, which is the calmest life;
But pain is perfect miserie, the worst
Of evils, and excessive overturnes
All patience. He who therefore can invent
With what more forcible we may offend
Our yet unwounded Enemies, or arme
Our selves with like defence, to me deserves
No less then for deliverance what we owe.

Whereto with look compos'd *Satan* replid.
Not uninvented that, which thou aright
Believest so main to our success, I bring;
Which of us who beholds the bright surface
Of this Ethereous mould whereon we stand,
This continent of spacious Heav'n, adorn'd
With Plant, Fruit, Flour Ambrosial, Gems & Gold;
Whose

Whose Eye so superficially surveyes
 These things, as not to mind from whence they grow
 Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,
 Of spiritous and fierie spume, till toucht
 With Heav'n's ray, and temperd they shoot forth
 So beauteous, op'ning to the ambient light.
 These in thir dark Nativitie the Deep
 Shall yield us pregnant with infernal flame,
 Which into hallow Engins long and round
 Thick-ramard, at th' other bore with touch of fire
 Dilated and infuriate shall send forth
 From far with thundring noise among our foes
 Such implements of mischief as shall dash
 To pieces, and orewhelm whatever stands
 Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarm'd
 The Thunderer of his only dreaded bolt.
 Nor long shall be our labour, yet ere dawn,
 Effect shall end our wish, Mean while revive;
 Abandon fear: to strength and counsel joind
 Think nothing hard, much less to be despair'd.
 He ended, and his words thir drooping chere
 Enlightn'd, and thir languisht hope reviv'd.
 Th' invention all admir'd, and each, how hee
 To be th' inventer miss'd, so easie it, seemd
 Once found, which yet unsound most would have
 Impossible; yet haply of thy Race (thought
 In future dayes, if Malice should abound,
 Some one intent on mischief, or inspir'd
 With dev'lish machination might devise
 Like instrument to plague the Sons of men
 For sin, on warr and mutual slaughter bent.
 Forthwith from Council to the work they flew,
 None arguing stood, innumerable hands
 Were ready, in a moment up they turn'd

Wide

Book VI. *Paradise Lost*. 139

Widethe Celestial soile, and saw beneath
 Th' originals of Nature in thir crude
 Conception: Sulphurous and Nitrous Foame
 They found, they mingl'd, and with subtle Art,
 Concocted and adusted they reduced
 To blackest grain, and into store convey'd:
 Part bidd'n veins digg'd up (nor hath this Earth
 Entrails unlike) of Mineral and Stone,
 Whereof to found thir Engins and thir Balls
 Of missive ruin; part incentive reed
 Provide, pernicious with one touch to fire.
 Soall ere day-spring, under conscious Night
 Secret they finish'd, and in order set,
 With silent circumspection unespied:
 Now when fair Morn Orient in Heav'n appeerd
 Uprose the Victor Angels, and to Arms
 The matin Trumpet Sung: in Arms they stood
 Of Golden Panoplie, refulgent Host,
 Soon banded; others from the dawning Hills
 Lookd round, and Scouts each Coast light-armed
 Each quarter, to descrie the distant foe, (secure
 Where lodg'd, or whither fled, or if for fight,
 In motion or in alt: him soon they met
 Under spred Ensignes moving nigh, in slow
 Not firm Battalion; back with speediest Sail
 Zaphiel, of Cherubim the swiftest wing,
 Came flying, and in mid Aire aloud thus cri'd.
 Arme, Warriours, Arme for fight, the foe at hand,
 Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuie
 This day, fear not his flight; so thick a Cloud
 He comes, and settl'd in his face I see
 A resolution and secure: let each
 In Adamantine coat gird well, and each
 As well his Helme, gripe fast his orbed Shield,
 Born

Born eevn or high, for this day will pour down,
 If I conjecture aught, no drizzling shower,
 But rattling storm of Arrows barbd with fire.
 So warn'd he them aware themselves, and soon
 In order, quit of all impediment
 Instant without disturb they took Alarm,
 And onward move Embattel'd; when behold
 Not distant far with heavie pace the Foe
 Approaching; gross and huge; in hollow Cube
 Training his devilish Enginrie, impald
 On every side with shadowing Squadrons Deep,
 To hide the fraud. At interview both stood
 A while, but suddenly at head appeerd
 Satan: And thus was heard Commanding loud.

Vanguard, to Right and Left the Front unfould;
 That all may see who hate us, how we seek
 Peace and compesure, and with open brest
 Stand readie to receive them, if they like
 Our overture, and turn not back perverse;
 But that I doubt, however witness Heaven,
 Heav'n witness thou anon, while we discharge
 Freely our part; yee who appointed stand
 Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch
 What we propound, and loud that all may hear.

So scoffing in ambiguous words he scarce,
 Had ended; when to Right and Left the Front
 Divided, and to either Flank retir'd.
 Which to our eyes discoverd new and strange,
 A triple mounted row of Pillars laid
 On Wheels (for like to Pillars most they seem'd)
 Or hollow'd bodies made of Oak or Firr
 With branches lopt, in Wood or Mountain fell'd;
 Brass, Iron, Stoneie mould, had not thir mouthes
 With hideous orifice gap't on us wide,

BOOK VI *Paradise Lost*, 161

Torrending hollow (ruce; at each behind
A Seraph stood, and in his hand a Reed
Stood waving tip't with fire; while we suspense,
Collected stood within our thoughts amus'd,
Not long, for sudden all at once thir Reeds
Put forth, and to a narrow vent appli'd
With nicest touch Immediate in a flame,
But soon obscur'd with smoak, all Heav'n appear'd
From those deep throated Engins belcht, whose roar
Emboweld with outrageous noise the Air,
And all her entrails tore, disgorging foule
Thir devilish glut, chain'd Thunderbolts and Hail
Of Iron Globes, which on the Victor Host
Level'd, with such impetuous furie smote,
That whom they hit, none on thir feet might stand,
Though standing else as Rocks, but down they fell
By thousands, Angel on Arch-Angel rowl'd;
The sooner for thir Arms, unarm'd they might
Have easily as Spirits eluded swift
By quick contraction or remove; but now
Foule dissipation follow'd, and forc't rout;
Nor serv'd it to relax thir ferried files.
What should they do? if on they rush't, repulse
Repeated, and indecent overthrow
Doubt'd, would render them yet more despis'd,
And to thir foes a laughter; for in view
Stood rankt of Seraphim another row
In posture to displode thir second fire
Of Thunder: back defeated to return
They worse abhor'd. *Satan* beheld thir plight,
And to his Mates thus in derision call'd.

O Friends, why come not on these Victors proud?
Ere while they fierce were coming, and when wee,
To entertain them fair with open Front

M

And

And Brest, (what could we more?) propounded terms
 Of composition; strait they chang'd thir minds,
 Flew off, and into strange vagaries fell,
 As they would dance, yet for a dance they seem'd
 Somewhat extravagant and wilde, perhaps
 For joy of offerd peace: but I suppose
 If our proposals once again were heard
 We should compel them to a quick result.

To whom thus *Belial* in like gamesom mood,
 Leader, the terms we sent were terms of weight,
 Of hard contents, and full of force urg'd home,
 Such as we might perceive amus'd them all,
 And stumbl'd many, who receives them right,
 Had need from head to foot well understand;
 Not understood, this gift they have besides,
 They shew us when our foes walk not upright.

So they among themselves in pleasant veine
 Stood scoffing, highthn'd in thir thoughts beyond
 All doubt of Victorie, eternal might
 To match with thir inventions they presum'd
 So easie, and of his Thunder made a scorn,
 And all his Host derided, while they stood
 A while in trouble; but they stood not long,
 Rage prompted them at length, and found them arm'd
 Against such hellish mischief fit to oppose.
 Forthwith (beheld the excellence, the power
 Which God hath in his mighty Angels plac'd)
 Thir Arms away they threw, and to the Hills
 (For Earth hath this variety from Heav'n
 Of pleasure situate in Hill and Dale)
 Light as the Lightning glimps they ran, they flew,
 From thir foundations loosning to and fro
 They pluckt the seated Hills with all thir load,
 Rocks, Waters, Woods, and by the shaggie tops

BOOK VI. *Paradise Lost.* 163

Up lifting bore them in thir hands : Amaze,
 Be sure, and terrour seis'd the rebel Host,
 When coming towards them so dread they saw
 The bottom of the Mountains upward turn'd,
 Till on those cursed Engins triple-row
 They saw them whelm'd, and all thir confidence
 Under the weight of Mountains buried deep,
 Themselves invaded next, and on thir heads
 Main Promontories flung, which in the Air
 Came shadowing, and oppress'd whole Legions arm'd,
 Thir armor help'd thir harm, crush't in and bruis'd
 Into thir substance pent, which wrought them pain
 Implacable, and many a dolorous groan,
 Long struggling underneath, ere they could wind
 Out of such prison, though Spirits of purest light,
 Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.
 The rest in imitation to like Armes
 Betook them, and the neighbouring Hills upstare;
 So Hills amid the Air encountred Hills
 Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation dire,
 That under ground, they fought in dismal shade;
 Infernal noise; Warr seem'd a civil Game
 To this uproar; horrid confusion heapt
 Upon confusion rose: and now all Heav'n
 Had gon to wrack, with ruin overspred,
 Had not th' Almighty Father where he sits
 Shrin'd in his Sanctuarie of Heav'n secure,
 Consulting on the sum of things, foreseen
 This tumult, and permitted all, advis'd:
 That his great purpose he might so fulfill,
 To honour his Anointed Son aveng'd
 Upon his enemies, and to declare
 All power on him transferr'd: whence to his Son
 Th' Assessor of his Throne he thus began.

Effulgence of my Glorie, Son belov'd,
 Son in whose face invisible is beheld
 Visibly, what by Deitie I am,
 And in whose hand what by Decree I doe,
 Second Omnipotence, two dayes are past,
 Two dayes, as we compute the dayes of Heav'n,
 Since *Michael* and his Powers went forth to tame
 These disobedient; sore hath been thir fight,
 As likeliest was, when two such Foes went arm'd;
 For to themselves I left them, and thou knowst,
 Equal in their Creation they were form'd,
 Save what sin hath impaird, which yet hath wrought
 Insensibly, for I suspend thir doom;
 Whence in perpetual fight they needs must last
 Endless, and no solution will be found:
 Warr wearied hath perform'd what Warr can do,
 And to disorder'd rage let loose the reines, (makes
 With Mountains as with Weapons arm'd, which
 Wild work in Heav'n, and dangerous to the maine.
 Two dayes are therefore past, the third is thine;
 For thee I have ordain'd it, and thus farr
 Have sufferd, that the Glorie may be thine
 Of ending this great Warr, since none but Thou
 Can end it. Into thee such Vertue and Grace
 Immense I have transfus'd, that all may know
 In Heav'n and Hell thy Power above compare,
 And this perverse Commotion governd thus,
 To manifest thee worthiest to be Heir
 Of all things, to be Heir and to be King
 By Sacred Unction, thy deserved right.
 Go then thou Mightiest in thy Fathers might,
 Ascend my Chariot, guide the rapid Wheels
 That shake Heav'n's basis, bring forth all my Warr,
 My Bow and Thunder, my Almighty Arms

BOOK VI. *Paradise Lost.* 165

Gird on, and Sword upon thy puissant Thigh;
Pursue these sons of Darkness, drive them out
From all Heav'n's bounds into the utter Deep:
There let them learn, as likes them, to despise
God and *Messiah* his anointed King.

He said, and on his Son with Rayes direct
Shon full, he all his Father full exprest
Ineffably into his face receiv'd,
And thus the filial Godhead answering spake.

O Father, O Supream of heav'nly Thrones,
First, Highest, Holiest, Best, thou alwayes seekst
To glorifie thy Son, I alwayes thee,
As is most just; this I my Glorie account,
My exaltation, and my whole delight,
That thou in me well pleas'd, declarst thy will
Fulfill'd, which to fulfil is all my bliss.
Scepter and Power, thy giving, I assume,
And gladder shall resign, when in the end
Thou shalt be All in All, and I in thee
For ever, and in mee all whom thou lov'st:
But whom thou hat'st, I hate and can put on
Thy terrors, as I put thy mildness on,
Image of thee in all things; and shall soon,
Arm'd with thy might, rid heav'n of these rebell'd,
To thir prepar'd ill Mansion driven down
To chains of darkness, and th' undying worm,
That from thy just obedience could revolt,
Whom to obey is happiness entire.
Then shall thy Saints unmixt, and from th' impure
Farr separate, circling thy holy Mount
Unfained *Halleluiahs* to thee sing,
Hymns of high praise, and I among them chief.
So said, he o're his Scepter bowing, rose
From the right hand of Glorie where he sat,

And the third sacred Morn began to shine
 Dawning through Heav'n : forth rush'd with whirl-
 The Chariot of Paternal Deitie, (wind sound
 Flashing thick flames, Wheele within Wheele un-
 It self instinct with Spirit, but convoyd drawn,
 By four Cherubic shapes, four Faces each
 Had wondrous, as with Starrs thir bodies all
 And wings were set with Eyes, with Eyes the wheels
 Of Beril, and careering Fires between ;
 Over thir heads a chrystal Firmament,
 Whereon a Saphir Throne, inlaid with pure
 Amber, and colours of the shewrie Arch.
 Hee in Celestial Panoplie all armd
 Of radiant *Urim*, work divinely wrought,
 Ascended, at his right hand Victorie
 Sate Eagle-wing'd, beside him hung his Bow
 And Quiver with three bolted Thunder stor'd,
 And from about him fierce Effusion rowld
 Offmoak and bickering flame, and sparkles dire ;
 Attended with ten thousand thousand Saints,
 He onward came, farr off his coming shon,
 And twentie thousand (I thir number heard)
 Chariots of God, half on each hand were seen :
 Hee on the wings of Cherub rode sublime
 On the Chrystallin Skie, in Saphir Thron'd.
 Illustrious farr and wide, but by his own
 First seen, them unexpected joy surpriz'd,
 When the great Ensign of *Messiah* blaz'd
 Aloft by Angels born, his Sign in Heav'n ;
 Under whose conduct *Michael* soon reduc'd
 His Armie, circumfus'd on either Wing,
 Under thir Head imbodied all in one.
 Before him Power Divine his way prepar'd ;
 At his command the uprooted Hills retir'd

BOOK VI. *Paradise Lost.* 167

Each to his place, they heard his voice and went
 Obsequious, Heav'n his wonted face renewd,
 And with fresh Flourets Hill and Valley smil'd.
 This saw his hapless Foes but stood obdur'd,
 And to rebellious fight rallied thir Powers
 Insensate; hope conceiving from despair.
 In heav'nly Spirits could such perverseness dwell?
 But to convince the proud what Signs avail,
 Or Wonders move th' obdurate to relent?
 They hard'nd more by what might most reclame,
 Grieving to see his Glorie, at the sight
 Took envie, and aspiring to his highth,
 Stood reimbattell'd fierce, by force or fraud
 Weening to prosper, and at length prevaile
 Against God and *Messiah*, or to fall
 In universal ruin last, and now
 To final Battel drew, disdainig flight,
 Or faint retreat: when the great Son of God
 To all his Host on either hand thus spake.

Stand still in bright array ye Saints, here stand
 Ye Angels arm'd, this day from Battel rest;
 Faithful hath been your warfare, and of God
 Accepted, fearless in his righteous Cause,
 And as ye have receivd, so have ye don
 Invincibly; but of this cursed crew
 The punishment to other hand belongs,
 Vengeance is his, or whose he sole appoints;
 Number to this dayes work is not ordain'd
 Nor multitude, stand onely and behold
 Gods indignation on these Godless pourd
 By mee, not you but mee they have despis'd,
 Yet envied; against mee is all thir rage,
 Because the Father, & whom in Heav'n supream
 Kingdom and Power and Glorie appertains,

Hath honourd me according to his will,
Therefore to mee thir doom he hath assign'd;
That they may have thir wish, to trie with mee
In Battel which the stronger proves, they all,
Or I alone against them, since by strength
They measure all, of other excellence
Not emulous, nor care who them excells;
Nor other strife with them do I voutsafe.

So spake the Son, and into terrour chang'd
His countenance too severe to be beheld,
And full of wrauth bent on his Enemies.
At once the Four spread out thir Starrie wings
With dreadful shade contiguous, and the Orbes
Of his fierce Chariot rowld, as with the sound
Of torrent Floods, or of a numerous Host.
Hee on his impious Foes right onward drove,
Gloomie as Night; under his burning Wheelles
The stedfast Empyrean shook throughout,
All but the Throne it self of God. Full soon
Among them he arriv'd; in his right hand
Grasping ten thousand Thunders, which he sent
Before him such as in thir Soules infix'd
Plagues; they astonisht all resistance lost,
All courage; down thir idle weapons drop'd;
O're-Shields and Helmes, and Helmed heads he rode
Of Thrones and mighty Seraphim prostrate,
That wist the Mountains now might be again
Thrown on them as a shelter from his ire.
Nor less on either side tempestuous fell
His arrows, from the fourfold-visag'd Foure,
Distinct with eyes, and from the living Wheelles
Distinct alike with multitude of eyes,
One Spirit in them rul'd, and every eye
Glar'd lightning, and shot forth pernicious fire

Among

Among th' accurst, that witherd all thir strength,
And of thir wonted vigour left them draind,
Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fall'n.
Yet half his strength he put not forth, but check'd
His Thunder in mid Volie, for he meant
Not to destroy, but root them out of Heav'n:
The overthrow he rais'd, and as a Heard
Of Goats or timorous flock together throngd
Drove them before him Thunder-struck, pursu'd
With terrors and with furies to the bounds
And Chrystal wall of Heav'n, which op'ning wide,
Rowld inward, and a spacious Gap disclos'd
Into the wastful Deep; the monstrous sight
Strook them with horror backward, but far worse
Urg'd them behind; headlong themselves they threw
Down from the verge of Heav'n, Eternal wrath
Burnt after them to the bottomless pit.

Hell heard th' unsufferable noise, Hell saw
Heav'n ruining from Heav'n and would have fled
Affrighted; but strict Fate had cast too deep
Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound,
Nine dayes they fell; confounded *Chaos* roard,
And felt tenfold confusion in thir fall
Through his wilde Anarchie, so huge a rout
Incumberd him with ruin: Hell at last
Yawning receavd them whole, and on them clos'd;
Hell thir fit habitation fraught with fire
Unquenchable, the house of woe and paine.
Disbur'dnd Heav'n rejoic'd, and soon repaired
Her mural breach, returning whence it rowld,
Sole Victor from th' expulsion of his Foes
Messiah his triumphal Chariot turnd:
To meet him all his Saints, who silent stood
Eye witnesses of his Almighty-Acts,

With

With Jubilee advanc'd; and as they went,
 Shaded with branching Palme, each order bright,
 Sung Triumph, and him sung Victorious King,
 Son, Heir, and Lord, to him Dominion giv'n,
 Worthiest to Reign: he celebrated rode
 Triumphant through mid Heav'n, into the Courts
 And Temple of his mightie Father Thron'd
 On high: who into Glorie him receav'd,
 Where now he sits at the right hand of blifs.

Thus measuring things in heav'n by things on earth
 At thy request, and that thou maist beware
 By what is past, to thee I have reveal'd
 What might have else to human Race bin hid;
 The discord which besel, and Warr in Heav'n
 Among th' Angelic Powers, and the deep fall
 Of those too high aspiring, who rebelld
 With *Satan*, hee who envies now thy state,
 Who now is plotting how he may seduce
 Thee also from obedience, that with him
 Bereavd of happines thou maist partake
 His punishment, Eternal miserie;
 Which would be all his solace and revenge,
 As a despite don against the most High,
 Thee once to gain Companion of his woe.
 But list'n not to his Temptations, warne
 Thy weaker: let it profit thee to have heard
 By terrible Example the reward
 Of disobedience; firm they might have stood,
 Yet fell; remember, and fear to transgress.

The End of the Sixth Book.

Paradise

Paradise Lost.

BOOK VII.

THE ARGUMENT.

Raphael at the request of Adam relates how and wherefore this world was first created; that God, after the expelling of Satan and his Angels out of Heaven, declar'd his pleasure to create another world and other Creatures to dwell therein; sends his Son with Glory and attendance of Angels to perform the work of Creation in six dayes: the Angels celebrate with Hymns the performance thereof, and his reascension into Heaven.

D Escend from Heav'n *Urania*, by that name
If rightly thou art call'd, whose voice divine
Following, above th' *Olympian* Hill I soare,
Above the flight of *Pegasean* wing.

The meaning, not the Name I call: for thou
Nor of the *Muses* nine, nor on the top
Of old *Olympus* dwell'st but Heav'nlic borne,
Before the Hills appeerd, or Fountain flow'd,

Thou

Thou with Eternal wisdom didst converse,
 Wisdom thy Sister, and with her didst play
 In presence of the Almighty Father, pleas'd
 With thy Celestial Song. Up led by thee
 Into the Heav'n of Heav'ns I have presum'd,
 An Earthlie Guest, and drawn Empyrean Aire,
 Thy tempring; with like safetie guided down
 Return me to my Native Element:
 Least from this flying Steed unrein'd, (as once
Bellerophon, though from a lower Clime)
 Dismounted, on th' *Aleian* Field I fall
 Erroneous there to wander and forlorne.
 Half yet remains unsung but narrower bound
 Within the visible Diurnal Spheare;
 Standing on Earth, not rapt above the Pole,
 More safe I Sing with mortal voice, unchang'd
 To hoarse or mute, though fall'n on evil dayes,
 On evil dayes though fall'n, and evil tongues;
 In darkness, and with dangers compass'd round,
 And solitude; yet not alone, while thou
 Visist my slumbers Nightly, or when Morn
 Purples the East: still govern thou my Song,
Urania, and fit audience find, though few.
 But drive farr off the barbarous dissonance
 Of *Bacchus* and his revellers, the Race
 Of that wilde Rout that tore the *Thracian* Bard
 In *Rhodope*, where Woods and Rocks had Eares
 To rapture, till the savage clamor dround
 Both Harp and Voice; nor could the Muse defend
 Her Son. So fail not thou, who thee implores:
 For thou art Heav'nlie, (hee an empty dreame.
 Say Goddess, what ensu'd when *Raphael*,
 The affable Arch-Angel, had forewarn'd
Adam by dire example to beware

Apostasie,

apostasie, by what befell in Heaven
 to these Apostates, least the like befall
 in Paradise to *Adam* or his Race,
 charg'd not to touch the interdicted Tree,
 if they transgress, and slight that sole command,
 so easily obeyd amid the choice
 Of all tastes else to please thir appetite,
 Though wandring. He with his consorted *Eve*
 The storie heard attentive, and was fill'd
 With admiration, and deep Muse to heare
 Of things so high and strange, things to thir thought
 So unimaginable as hate in Heav'n,
 And Warr so neer the Peace of God in bliss
 With such confusion: but the evil soon
 Driv'n back redounded as a flood on those
 From whom it sprung, impossible to mix
 With Blessedness. Whence *Adam* soon repeal'd
 The doubts that in his heart arose: and now
 Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know
 What neerer might concern him, how this World
 Of Heav'n and Earth conspicuous first began,
 When, and whereof created, for what cause,
 What within *Eden* or without was done
 Before his memorie, as one whose drouth
 Yet scarce allay'd still eyes the current streame,
 Whose liquid murmur heard new thirst excites,
 Proceeded thus to ask his Heav'nly Guest,
 Great things, and full of wonder in our cares,
 Far differing from this World, thou hast reveal'd
 Divine interpreter, by favour sent
 Down from the Empyrean to forewarne
 Us timely of what might else have bin our loss,
 Unknown, which human knowledg could not reach:
 For which to the infinitely Good we owe

Immor-

174 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK VII

Immortal thanks, and his admonishment
 Receive with solemne purpose to observe
 Immutably his sovran will, the end
 Of what we are. But since thou hast voutsaf't
 Gently for our instruction to impart
 Things above Earthly thought, which yet concern
 Our knowing, as to highest wisdom seemd,
 Deign to descend now lower, and relate
 What may no less perhaps avails us known,
 How first began this Heav'n which we behold
 Distant so high, with moving Fires adorn'd
 Innumerable, and this which yeelds or fills
 All space, the ambient Aire wide interfus'd
 Imbracing round this florid Earth, what cause
 Mov'd the Creator in his holy Rest
 Through all Eternitie so late to build
 In *Chaos*, and the work begun, how soon
 Absolv'd, if unforbid thou maist unfold
 What we, not to explore the secrets aske
 Of his Eternal Empire, but the more
 To magnifie his work, the more we know.
 And the great Light of Day yet wants to run
 Much of his Race though steep, suspens in Heav'n
 Held by thy voice, thy potent voice he heares,
 And longer will delay to heare thee tell
 His Generation, and the rising Birth
 Of Nature from the unapparent Deep :
 Or if the Starr of Evening and the Moon
 Hasten to thy audience, Night with her will bring
 Silence, and Sleep listning to thee will watch,
 Or we can bid his absence, till thy Song
 End, and dismiss thee ere the Morning shine.

Thus *Adam* his illustrious Guest besought :
 And thus the Godlike Angel answerd milde.

This also thy request with caution askt
 Obtaine : though to recount Almighty works
 What words or tongue of Seraph can suffice,
 Or heart of man suffice to comprehend?
 Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve
 To glorifie the Maker, and inferr
 Thee also happier, shall not be withheld
 Thy hearing, such Commission from above
 I have receav'd, to answer thy desire
 Of knowledge within bounds; beyond abstain
 To ask, nor let thine own inventions hope
 Things not reveal'd, which th' invisible King,
 Onely Omniscient, hath suppress'd in Night,
 To none communicable in Earth or Heaven;
 Enough is left besides to search and know.
 But Knowledge is as food, and needs no less
 Her Temperance over Appetite, to know.
 In measure what the mind may well contain,
 Oppresses else with Surfet, and soon turns
 Wisdom to Folly, as Nourishment to Winde.

Know then, that after *Lucifer* from Heav'n
 (So call him, brighter once amidst the Host
 Of Angels, then that Starr the Starrs among)
 Fell with his flaming Legions through the Deep
 Into his place, and the great Son return'd
 Victorious with his Saints, th' Omnipotent
 Eternal Father from his Throne beheld
 Thir multitude, and to his Son thus spake.

At least our envious Foe hath fail'd, who thought
 All like himself rebellious, by whose aid
 This inaccessible high strength, the seat
 Of Deitie supream, us dispossest,
 He trusted to have seis'd, and into fraud
 Drew many, whom thir place knows here no more;

Yet

276 **Paradise Lost. BOOK VII.**

Yet farr the greater part have kept, I see,
 Thir station, Heav'n yet populous retains
 Number sufficient to possess her Realmes
 Though wide, and this high Temple to frequent
 With Ministeries due and solemn Rites :
 But least his heart exalt him in the harme
 Already done, to have dispeopl'd Heav'n
 My damage fondly deem'd, I can repaire
 That detriment, if such it be to lose
 Self-lost, and in a moment will create
 Another World, out of one man a Race
 Of men innumerable, there to dwell,
 Not here, till by degrees of merit rais'd
 They open to themselves at length the way
 Up hither, under long obedience tri'd,
 And Earth be chang'd to Heav'n, & Heav'n to Earth,
 One Kingdom, Joy and Union without end.
 Mean while inhabit laxe, ye Powers of Heav'n,
 And thou my Word, begotten Son, by thee
 This I perform, speak thou, and be it don :
 My overshadowing Spirit and might with thee
 I send along, ride forth, and bid the Deep
 Within appointed bounds be Heav'n and Earth,
 Boundless the Deep, because I am who fill
 Infinitude, nor vacuous the space.
 Though I uncircumscrib'd my self retire,
 And put not forth my goodness, which is free
 To act or not, Necessitie and Chance
 Approach not mee, and what I will is Fate.

So spake th' Almighty, and to what he spake
 His Word, the filial Godhead, gave effect.
 Immediate are the Acts of God, more swift
 Then time or motion, but to human ears
 Cannot without processe of speech be told,

BOOK VII. Paradise Lost. 177

So told as earthly notion can receive.
Great triumph and rejoycing was in Heav'n
When such was heard declar'd the Almighty's will;
Glorie they sung to the most High, good will
To future men, and in thir dwellings peace:
Glorie to him whose just avenging ire
Had driven out th' ungodly from his sight
And th' habitations of the just; to him
Glorie and praise whose wisdom had ordain'd
Good out of evil to create, in stead
Of Spirits maligne a better Race to bring
Into thir vacant room, and thence diffuse
His good to Worlds and Ages infinite:
So sang the Hierarchies: Mean while the Son
On his great Expedition now appear'd
Girt with Omnipotence, with Radiance crown'd
Of Majestie Divine, Sapience and Love
Immense, and all his Father in him shon.
About his Chariot numberless were pour'd
Cherub and Seraph, Potentates and Thrones,
And Vertues, winged Spirits, and Chariots wing'd,
From the Armoury of God, where stand of old
Myriads between two brazen Mountains lodg'd
Against a solemn day, harness'd at hand,
Celestiall Equipage; and now came forth
Spontaneous, for within them Spirit liv'd,
Attendant on thir Lord: Heav'n op'nd wide
Her ever durning Gates, Harmonious sound
On golden Hinges moving, to let forth
The King of Glorie in his powerful Word
And Spirit coming to create new Worlds.
On heav'nly ground they stood, and from the shore
They view'd the vast immeasurable Abyss
Outrageous as a Sea, dark, wasteful, wilde,

N

ilp

So

Up from the bottom turn'd by furious windes
 And surging waves, as Mountains to assault
 Heav'n's highth, and with the Center mix the Pole.

Silence, ye troubl'd waves, and thou Deep, peace,
 Said then th' Omnific VVord, your discord end :

Nor staid, but on the wings of Cherubim
 Uplifted, in Paternal Glorie rode
 Farr into *Chaos*, and the VVorld unborn ;
 For *Chaos* heard his voice : him all his Traine
 Follow'd in bright procession to behold
 Creation, and the wonders of his might.
 Then staid the servid VVheels, and in his hand
 He took the golden Compasses, prepar'd
 In Gods Eternal store, to circumscribe
 This Universe, and all created things :
 One foot he center'd, and the other turn'd
 Round through the vast profunditie obscure,
 And said, thus farr extend, thus farr thy bounds,
 This be thy just Circumference, O VVorld.
 Thus God the Heav'n created, thus the Earth,
 Matter unform'd and void : Darknes profound
 Cover'd th' Abyss : but on the wattric calme
 His brooding wings the Spirit of God outspred,
 And vital vertue infus'd, and vital warmth
 Throughout the fluid Mass, but downward purg'd
 The black tartareous cold Infernal dregs
 Adverse to life : then founded, then conglob'd
 Like things to like, the rest to severall place
 Disparted, and between spun out the Air,
 And Earth self-ballanc't on her Center hung.

Let ther be light, said God, and forthwith Light
 Ethereal, first of things, quintessence pure
 Sprung from the Deep, and from her Native East
 To journie through the airie gloum began,

Sphear

BOOK VII. *Paradise Lost.* 179

Sphear'd in a radiant Cloud, for yet the Sun
Was not; shee in a cloudie Tabernacle
Sojourn'd the while. God saw the Light was good;
And light from darkness by the Hemisphere
Divided: Light the Day, and Darkness Night
He nam'd. Thus was the first Day Eev'n and Morn:
Nor past uncelebrated, nor unsung
By the Celestial Quires, when Orient Light
Exhaling first from Darkness they beheld;
Birth-day of Heav'n and Earth; with joy and shout
The hollow Universal Orb they fill'd,
And touch't thir Golden Harps, and hymning prais'd
God and his works, Creatour him they sung,
Both when first Eevning was, and when first Morn.

Again, God said, let ther be Firmament
Amid the Waters, and let it divide
The Waters from the Waters: and God made
The Firmament, expanse of liquid, pure,
Transparent, Elemental Aire, diffus'd
In circuit to the uttermost convex
Of this great Round: partition firm and sure,
The Waters underneath from those above
Dividing: for as Earth, so he the World
Built on circumfluous Waters calme, in wide
Crystallin Ocean, and the loud misrule
Of *Chaos* farr remov'd, least fierce extreames
Contiguous might distemper the whole frame:
And Heav'n he nam'd the Firmament: So Eev'n
And Morning *Chorus* sung the second Day.

The Earth was form'd, but in the Womb as yet
Of Waters, Embryon immature involv'd,
Appeer'd not: over all the face of Earth
Main Ocean flow'd, not idle, but with warme
Prolific humour soft'ning all her Globe,

Fermented the great Mother to conceive,
 Satiare with moisture, when God said
 Be gather'd now ye Waters under Heav'n
 Into one place and let dry Land appeer,
 Immediately the Mountains huge appeer
 Emergent, and thir broad bare backs up heave
 Into the Clouds, thir tops ascend the Skie:
 So high as heav'n the tumid Hills, so low
 Down sunk a hollow bottom broad and deep,
 Capacious bed of Waters; thither they
 Hastened with glad precipitance, uprowld
 As drops on dust conglobing from the drie;
 Part rise in crystal Wall, or ridge direct,
 For haste; such flight the great command impress'd
 On the swift floods: as Armies at the call
 Of Trumpet (for of Armies thou hast heard)
 Troop to thir Standard so the watric throng,
 Wave rowling after Wave, where they found,
 If steep, with torrent rapture, if through Plaine,
 Soft-ebbing; nor withstood them Rock or Hill,
 But they, or under ground, or circuit wide
 With Serpent errour wandring, found thir way,
 And on the washie Oose deep Channels wore;
 Easie, e're God had bid the ground be drie,
 All but within banks, where Rivers now
 Stream, and perpetual draw thir humid traine.
 The dry Land, Earth, and the great receptacle
 Of congregated Waters he call'd Seas:
 And saw that it was good, and said, Let th' Earth
 Put forth the verdant Grass, Herb yielding Seed,
 And Fruit Tree yielding Fruit after her kind;
 Whose Seed is in her self upon the Earth.
 He scarce had said, when the bare Earth, till then
 Desert and bare, unlightly, unadornd,

Brought

IL
Book VII. *Paradise Lost.* 181

Brought forth the tender Grass, whose verdure clad
Her Universal Face with pleasant green,
Then Herbs of every leaf, that sudden flou'd
Op'ning thir various colours, and made gay
Her bosom smelling sweet : and these scarce blown
Forth flourish't thick the clustring Vine, forth crept
The smelling Gourd, up stood the cornie Reed
Embattell'd in her field : and the humble Shrub,
And Bush with frizl'd hair implicit : last
Rose as in Dance the stately Trees, and spread
Thir branches hung with copious Fruit ; or gemm'd
Thir blossoms : with high woods the hills were crown'd
With tufts the vallies and each fountain side,
With borders long the Rivers. That Earth now
Seem'd like to Heav'n, a seat where God might dwell,
Or wander with delight, and love to haunt
Her sacred shades : though God had not yet rain'd
Upon the Earth, and man to till the ground
None was, but from the Earth a dewie Mist
Went up and waterd all the ground, and each
Plant of the field, which e're it was in the Earth
God made, and every Herb, before it grew
On the green stemm ; God saw that it was good.
So Eev'n and Morn recorded the Third Day.

Again th' Almighty spake : Let there be Lights
High in th' expanse of Heaven to divide
The Day from Night ; and let them be for Signes,
For Seasons, and for Dayes, and circling Years,
And let them be for Lights as I ordaine
Thir Office in the Firmament of Heav'n
To give Light on the Earth ; and it was so.
And God made two great Lights, great for thir use
To Man, the greater to have rule by Day,
The less by Night alterne : and made the Starrs,

182 *Paradise Lost.* Book VII.

And set them in the Firmament of Heav'n
 To illuminate the earth, and rule the Day
 In their vicissitude, and rule the Night,
 And light from darkness to divide. God saw,
 Surveying his great Work, that it was good :
 For of Celestial bodies first the Sun
 A mighty Spheare he fram'd, unlightfom first,
 Though of Ethereal Mould : then form'd the Moon
 Globose, and every magnitude of Starrs,
 And sowd with Starrs the Heav'n thick as a field :
 Of Light by farr the greater part he took,
 Transplanted from her cloudy shrine, and plac'd
 In the Suns Orb, made porous to receive
 And drink the liquid Light, firm to retain
 Her gather'd beams, great Palace now of Light.
 Hither as to their Fountain other Starrs
 Repairing in thir gold'n Urns draw light,
 And hence the Morning Planet guilds her horns ;
 By tincture or reflection they augment
 Thir small peculiar, though from humane sight
 So far remote, with diminution seen.
 First in his East the glorious Lamp was seen,
 Regent of Day, and all th' Horizon round
 Invested with bright Rayes, jocond to run
 His Longitude through Heav'n's high rode : the gray
 Dawn, and the *Pleiades* before him danc'd
 Shedding sweet influence : less bright the Moon,
 But opposite in level'd West was set
 His mirror, with full face borrowing her Light
 From him, for other light she needed none
 In that aspect, and still that distance keeps
 Till Night, then in the East her turn she shines,
 Revolv'd on Heavens great Axle, and her Reign
 With thousand lesser Lights dividuall holds,

With

IL BOOK VII. *Paradise Lost.* 183

With thousand thousand Starres, that then appear'd
Spangling the Hemisphere: then first adorn'd
With thir bright Luminaries that Set and Rose,
Glad Eevning and glad Morn crown'd the fourth day.

And God said, let the Waters generate
Reptil with Spawn abundant, living Soule:
And let Fowle flie above the Earth, with wings
Display'd on the op'n Firmament of Heav'n.
And God created the great Whales, and each
Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously
The waters generated by thir kindes,
And every Bird of wing after his kind;
And saw that it was good, and blest'd them, saying,
Be fruitful, multiply, and in the Seas
And Lakes and running Streams the waters fill;
And let the Fowle be multiply'd on the Earth,
Forthwith the Sounds and Seas, each Creek and Bay
With Frie innumerable swarme, and Shoales
Of Fish that with thir Finns and shining Scales
Glide under the green Wave, in Sculles that oft
Bark the mid Sea: part single or with mate
Graze the Sea weed thir pasture, and through Groves
Of Coral stray, or sporting with quick glance
Show to the Sun thir wav'd coats dropt with Gold,
Or in thir Pearlie shells at ease, attend
Moist nutriment, or under Rocks thir food
In jointed Armour watch: on smooth the Seale,
And bended Dolphins play: part huge of bulk
Wallowing unweildie, enormous in thir Gate
Tempest the Ocean: there Leviathan
Hugest of living Creatures, on the Deep
Stretcht like a Promontorie sleeps or swimmes,
And seems a moving Land, and at his Gilles
Draws in, and at his Trunck spouts out a Sea.

184 *Paradise Lost.* Book VII

Mean while the tepid Caves, and Fens and shoares
 Thir Brood as numerous hatch, from the Egg that
 Bursting with kindly rupture forth disclos'd (soon
 Thir callow young, but featherd soon and sledge
 They summ'd thir Penns, and soaring th' air sublime
 With clang despis'd the ground, under a cloud
 In prospect; there the Eagle and the Stork
 On Cliffs and Cedar tops thir Eyries build:
 Part loosely wing the Region, part more wise
 In common, rang'd in figure wedge thir way.
 Intelligent of seasons, and set forth
 Thir Aerie Caravan high over Sea's
 Flying, and over Lands with mutual wing
 Easing thir flight; so steers the prudent Crane
 Her annual Voiage, born on Windes; the Aire
 Floats, as they pass, fann'd with unnumber'd plumes
 From Branch to Branch the smaller Birds with song
 Solac'd the Woods, and spread thir painted wings
 Till Ev'n, nor then the solemn Nightingal
 Ceas'd warbling, but all night tun'd her soft layes;
 Others on Silver Lakes and Rivers Bath'd
 Thir downie Brest; the Swan with Arched neck
 Between her white wings mantling proudly, Rows
 Her state with Oarie feet: yet oft they quit
 The Dank, and rising on stiff Pennons, towre
 The mid Aereal Skie: Others on ground
 Walk'd firm; the crested Cock whose clarion sounds
 The silent hours and th' other whose gay Traine
 Adorns him, colour'd with the Florid hue
 Of Rainbows and Starrie Eyes. The Waters thus
 With Fish replenisht, and the Aire with Fowle,
 Ev'ning and Morn solemniz'd the Fifth day.

The Sixt, and of Creation last arose
 With Eevning Harps and Mattin, when God said,

Let

BOOK VII. Paradise Lost. 183

Let th' Earth bring forth Foul living in her kinde,
 Cattel and Creeping things, and Beast of the Earth,
 Each in their kinde. The Earth obey'd, and strait
 Op'ning her fertil Womb teem'd at a Birth
 Innumerable living Creatures, perfect formes,
 Limb'd and full grown : out of the ground up rose
 As from his Laire the wilde Beast where he wonns
 In Forrest wilde, in Thicket, Brake, or Den ;
 Among the Trees in Pairs they rose, they walk'd
 The Cattel in the Fields and Meddowes green :
 Those rare and solitarie, these in flocks
 Pasturing at once, and in broad Herds up sprung,
 The grassie Clods now Calv'd, now half appear'd
 The Tawnie Lion, pawing to get free
 His hinder parts, then springs as broke from Bonds,
 And Rampant shakes his Brinded main ; the Ounce,
 The Libbard, and the Tyger, as the Moale
 Rising, the crumbl'd Earth above them threw
 In Hillocks : the swift Stag from under ground
 Bore up his branching head : scarce from his mould
 Behemoth biggest born of Earth upheav'd
 His vastness : Fleec't the Flocks and bleating rose,
 As Plants : ambiguous between Sea and Land
 The River Horse and scalie Crocodile.
 At once came forth whatever creeps the ground,
 Insect or Worme : those wav'd thir limber fans
 For wings, and smallest Lineaments exact
 In all the Liveries deckt of Summers pride
 With spots of Gold and Purple, azure and green :
 These as a line thir long dimension drew,
 Streaking the ground with sinuous trace ; not all
 Minims of Nature ; some of Serpent kinde
 Wondrous in length and corpulence involv'd
 Thir Snakie foulds, and added wings. First crept
 The

The Parsimonious Emmet, provident
 Of future, in small room large heart enclos'd.
 Pattern of just equalitie perhaps
 Hereafter, join'd in her popular Tribes
 Of Commonaltie : swarming next appeard
 The Female Bee that feeds her Husband Drone
 Deliciously, and builds her waxen Cells
 With Honey stor'd : the rest are numberless,
 And thou thir Natures know'st, & gav'st them names,
 Needleless to thee repeated ; nor unknown
 The Serpent suttl'st Beast of all the field,
 Of huge extent sometimes, with brazen eyes
 And hairie Main terrific, though to thee
 Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.
 Now Heav'n in all her Glorie shon, and rowld
 Her motions, as the great first-Movers hand
 First wheeld thir course : Earth in her rich attire
 Consummate lovly smil'd ; Aire, water, Earth
 By Fowl, Fish, Beast, was flown, was swum, was walkt
 Frequent ; and of the Sixt day yet remain'd ;
 There wanted yet the Master work, the end
 Of all yet don ; a Creature who not prone
 And Brute as other Creatures, but endu'd
 With Sanctitie of Reason, might erect
 His Stature, and upright with Front serene
 Govern the rest, self-knowing, and from thence
 Magnanimous to correspond with Heav'n,
 But grateful to acknowledge whence his good
 Descends, thither with heart and voice and eyes
 Directed in Devotion, to adore
 And worship God Supream, who made him chief
 Of all his works : therefore the Omnipotent
 Eternal Father (For where is not hee
 Present) thus to his Son audibly spake,

Let

BOOK VII. Paradise Lost. 187

Let us make now Man in our image, Man
 In our similitude, and let them rule
 Over the Fish and Fowle of Sea and Aire,
 Beast of the Field, and over all the Earth,
 And every creeping thing that creeps the ground.
 This said, he formd thee. *Adam*, thee O Man
 Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breath'd
 The breath of Life; in his own Image hee
 Created thee, in the Image of God
 Express, and thou becam'st a living Soul.
 Male he created thee, but thy consort
 Female for Race; then blest'd Mankinde, and said,
 Be fruitful, multiplie, and fill the Earth,
 Subdue it, and throughout Dominion hold
 Over Fish of the Sea, Fowle of the Aire,
 And every living thing that moves on the Earth
 Wherever thus created, for no place
 Is yet distinct by name, thence, as thou know'st
 He brought thee into this delicious Grove,
 This Garden, planted with the Trees of God,
 Delectable both to behold and taste;
 And freely all thir pleasant fruit for food
 Gave thee, all sorts are here that all th' Earth yields
 Varietie without end; but of the Tree
 Which tasted works knowledge of Good and Evil,
 Thou mai'st not; in the day thou eat'st, thou di'st;
 Death is the penaltie impos'd, beware,
 And govern well thy appetite, least sin
 Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.
 Here finish'd hee, and all that he had made
 View'd, and behold all was entirely good;
 So Ev'n and Morn accomplish'd the Sixt day:
 Yet not till the Creator from his work
 Desisting, though unwearied, up returnd

Up

Up to the Heav'n of Heav'ns his high abode,
 Thence to behold the new created World
 Th' addition of his Empire, how it shew'd
 In prospect from his Throne, how good, how faire,
 Answering his great Idea. Up he rode
 Followd with acclamation and the sound
 Symphonious of ten thousand Harpes that tun'd
 Angelic harmonies : the Earth, the Aire
 Resounded, (thou remember'st, for thou heard'st)
 The Heav'ns and all the Constellations rung,
 The Planets in thir station list'ning stood,
 While the bright Pomp ascended jubilant.
 Open, ye everlasting Gates, they sung,
 Open, ye Heav'ns, your living dores; let in
 The great Creator from his work returnd
 Magnificent, his Six dayes work, a World;
 Open, and henceforth oft; for God will deigne
 To visit oft the dwellings of just Men
 Delighted, and with frequent intercourse
 Thither will send his winged Messengers
 On errands of supernal Grace. So sung
 The glorious Train ascending : He through Heav'ns
 That open'd wide her blazing Portals, led
 To Gods Eternal house direct the way.
 A broad and ample rode, whose dust is Gold
 And pavement Starrs, as Starrs to thee appeer,
 Seen in the Galaxie, that Milkie way
 Which nightly as acircling Zone thou seest
 Pouderd with Starrs. And now on Earth the Seventh
 Eev'ning arose in *Eden*, for the Sun
 Was set, and twilight from the East came on,
 Forerunning Night; when at the holy mount
 Of Heav'ns high-seated top, th' Imperial Throne
 Of Godhead, fixt for ever firm and sure,

BOOK VII. *Paradise Lost.* 189

The Filial Power arriv'd, and sate him down
With his great Father (for he also went
Invisible, yet staid (such priviledge
Hath Omnipresence) and the work ordain'd,
Anteor and end of all things, and from work
Now resting, blest'd and hallowd the Seav'nth day,
As resting on that day from all his work,
But not in silence holy kept; the Harp
Had work and rested not, the solemn Pipe,
And Dulcimer, all Organs of sweet stop,
All sounds on Fret by String or Golden Wire
Temper'd soft Tunings, intermixt with Voice
Choral or Unison; of incense Clouds
Fuming from Golden Censers hid the Mount.
Creation and the Six dayes acts they sung,
Great are thy works, *Jehovah*, infinite
Thy power; what thought can measure thee or tongue
Relate thee; greater now in thy return
Then from the Giant Angels; thee that day
Thy Thunders magnifi'd; but to create
Is greater then created to destroy.
Who can impair thee, mighty King, or bound
Thy Empire? easily the proud attempt
Of Spirits apostat and thir Counsels vaine
Thou hast repeld, while impiously they thought
Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw
The number of thy worshippers, Who seekes
To lessen thee, against his purpose serves
To manifest the more thy might: his evil
Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.
Witness this new-made World, another Heav'n
From Heaven Gate not farr, founded in view
On the cleer *Hyaline*, the Glassie Sea;
Of amplitude almost immense, with Starr's
Numerous;

496 **Paradise Lost. BOOK VII.**

Numerous, and every Starr perhaps a World
Of destined habitation ; but thou know'st
Thir seasons : among these the seat of men,
Earth with her nether Ocean circumfus'd,
Thir pleasant dwelling place. Thrice happie men,
And sons of men, whom God hath thus advanc't,
Created in his Image, there to dwell
And worship him, and in reward to rule
Over his Works, on Earth, in Sea, or Air,
And multiply a Race of Worshippers
Holy and just : thrice happie if they know
Thir happiness, and persevere upright.

So sung they, and the Emphyrean rung,
With *Halleluiahs* : Thus was Sabbath kept.
And thy request think how fulfill'd, that ask'd
How first this World and face of things began,
And what before thy memorie was don
From the beginning, that posteritie
Inform'd by thee might know ; if else thou seekst
Aught, not surpassing human measure, say.

The End of the Seventh Book.

Paradise

Paradise Lost.

BOOK VIII.

THE ARGUMENT.

Adam inquires concerning celestial Motions, is doubtfully answer'd, and exhorted to search rather things more worthy of knowledg: Adam assents, and still desirous to detain Raphael, relates to him what he remember'd since his own Creation, his placing in Paradise, his talk with God concerning solitude and fit society, his first meeting and Nuptials with Eve, his discourse with the Angel thereupon; who after admonitions repeated departs.

THE Angel ended, and in Adam's Eare
 So charming left his voice, that he a while
 Thought him still speaking, still stood fixt to
 Then as new wak't thus gratefully repli'd. (hear;
 What thanks sufficient, or what recompence
 Equal have I to render thee, Divine
 Historian, who thus largely hast allayd
 The thirst I had of knowledge, and voutsaf't

This

This friendly condescension to relate
 Things else by me unsearchable, now heard
 With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,
 With glorie attributed to the high
 Creator ; something yet of doubt remains,
 Which onely thy solution can resolve.
 When I behold this goodly Frame, this World
 Of Heav'n and Earth consisting, and compute,
 Thir magnitudes, this Earth a spot, a graine,
 An Atom, with the Firmament compar'd
 And all her numberd Starrs, that seem to rowle
 Spaces incomprehensible (for such
 Thir distance argues and thir swift return
 Diurnal) meerly to officiate light
 Round this opacous Earth, this punctual spot,
 One day and night ; in all thir vast survey
 Useles besides, reasoning I oft admire,
 How Nature wise and frugal could commit
 Such disproportions, with superfluous hand
 So many nobler Bodies to create,
 Greater so manifold to this one use,
 For aught appeers, and on thir Orbs impose
 Such restless revolution day by day
 Repeated, while the sedentarie Earth,
 That better might with farr less compass move,
 Serv'd by more noble than her self, attaines
 Her end without least motion, and receaves,
 As Tribute such a sumless journey brought
 Of incorporeal speed, her warmth and light ;
 Speed, to describe whose swiftnes Number failes.
 So spake our Sire, and by his count'nance seemd
 Ent'ring on studious thoughts abstruse, which Eve
 Perceaving where she sat retir'd in sight,
 With lowliness Majestic from her seat,

And

And Grace that won who saw to wish her stay,
Rose, and went forth among her Fruits and Flowrs,
To visit how they prosper'd, bud and bloom,
Her Nurserie; they at her coming sprung
And toucht by her fair tendance gladlier grew.
Yet went she not, as not with such discourse
Delighted, or not capable her care
Of what was high: such pleasure she reserv'd,
Adam relating, the sole Auditress;
Her Husband the Relater she preferr'd
Before the Angel, and of him to ask
Chose rather; he, she knew would intermix
Grateful digressions, and solve high dispute
With conjugal Carresses from his Lip
Not words alone pleas'd her. O when meet now
Such pairs, in Love and mutual Honour joyn'd?
With Goddess-like demeanour forth she went;
Not unattended, for on her as Queen
A pomp of winning Graces waited still,
And from about her shot Darts of desire
Into all eyes to wish her still in sight,
And *Raphael* now to *Adam's* doubt propos'd
Benevolent and facil thus repli'd.

To ask or search I blame thee not, for Heav'n
Is as the Book of God before thee set,
Wherein to read his wondrous Works, and learne
His Seasons, Hours, or Dayes, or Months, or Years:
This to attain, whether Heav'n move or Earth,
Imports not, if thou reck'n right, the rest
From Man or Angel the great Architect
Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge
His secrets to be scann'd by them who ought
Rather admire; or if they list to try
Conjecture, he his Fabric of the Heav'ns

O

Hath

Hath left to thir disputes, perhaps to move
His laughter at thir quaint Opinions wide
Hereafter, when they come to model Heav'n
And calculate the Starrs, how they will wield
The mightie frame, how build, unbuild, contrive
To save appeerances, how gird the Sphear
With Centric and Eccentric scribl'd o're,
Cycle and Epicycle, Orb in Orb:
Alreadie by thy reasoning this I guesse,
Who art to lead thy offspring, and supposest
That bodies bright and greater should not serve
The lesse not bright, nor Heav'n such journies run,
Earth sitting still, when she alone receaves
The benefit: consider first, that Great
Or Bright inferrs not Excellence: the Earth
Though in comparison of Heav'n, so small,
Nor glistering, may of solid good containe
More plenty then the Sun that barren shines,
Whose vertue on it self workes no effect,
But in the fruitful Earth; there first receavd
His beams, unactive else, thir vigour find.
Yet not to Earth are those bright Luminaries
Officious, but to thee Earths habitant.
And for the Heav'ns wide Circuit, let it speak
The Makers high magnificence, who built
So spacious, and his Line stretcht out so farr;
That Man may know he dwells not in his own;
An Edifice too large for him to fill,
Lodg'd in a small partition, and the rest
Ordain'd for uses to his Lord best known.
The swiftness of those Circles attribute,
Though numberless, to his Omnipotence,
That to corporeal substances could adde
Speed almost Spiritual; me thou thinkst not slow.

Wh

BOOK VIII. *Paradise Lost.* 195

Who since the Morning hour set out from Heav'n
Where God resides, and ere mid-day arriv'd
In *Eden*, distance inexpressible
By Numbers that have name. But this I urge,
Admitting Motion in the Heav'ns, to shew
Invalid that which thee to doubt it mov'd;
Not that I so affirm, though so it seem
To thee who hast thy dwelling here on Earth.
God to remove his wayes from human sense,
Plac'd Heav'n from Earth so farr, that earthly sight,
If it presume, might erre in things too high,
And no advantage gaine. What if the Sun
Be Center to the World, and other Starrs
By his attractive vertue and thir own
Incited, dance about him various rounds?
Thir wandering course now high, now low, then hid,
Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,
In six thou seest. and what if sev'nth to these
The Planet Earth, so stedfast though she seem,
Insensibly three different Motions move?
Which else to several Sphears thou must ascribe,
Mov'd contrarie with thwart obliquities,
Or save the Sun his labour, and that swift
Nocturnal and Diurnal rhomb suppos'd,
Invisible else above all Starrs, the Wheele
Of Day and Night; which needs not thy beleeie,
If Earth industrious of her self fetch Day
Travelling East, and with her part averse
From the Suns beam meet Night, her other part
Still luminous by his ray. What if that light
Sent from her through the wide transpicious aire,
To the terrestrial Moon be as a Starr
Enlightning her by Day, as she by Night
This Earth? reciprocal, if Land be there,

196 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK VIII.

Feilds and Inhabitants : Her spots thou seest
 As Clouds, and Clouds may rain, and Rain produce
 Fruits in her soft'nd Soile, for some to eate
 Allotted there ; and other Suns perhaps
 With thir attendant Moons thou wilt descric
 Communicating Male and Femal Light,
 Which two great Sexes animate the World,
 Stor'd in each Orb perhaps with some that live.
 For such vast room in Nature unpossess
 By living Soule, desert and desolate,
 Onely to shine, yet scarce to contribute
 Each Orb a glimps of Light, conveyd so farr
 Down to this habitable, which returns
 Light back to them, is obvious to dispute.
 But whether thus these things, or whether not,
 Whether the Sun predominant in Heav'n
 Rise on the Earth, or Earth rise on the Sun,
 Hee from the East his flaming rode begin,
 Or Shee from West her silent course advance
 With inoffensive pace that spinning sleeps
 On her soft Axle, while she paces Eev'n,
 And beares thee soft with the smooth Air along,
 Sollicit not thy thoughts with matters hid,
 Leave them to God above, him serve and feare ;
 Of other Creatures, as him pleases best,
 Wherever plac't, let him dispose : joy thou
 In what he gives to thee, this Paradise
 And thy faire *Eve* ; Heav'n is for thee too high
 To know what passes there ; belowlie wise :
 Think onely what concernes thee and thy being ;
 Dream not of other Worlds, what Creatures there
 Live, in what state, condition or degree,
 Contented that thus farr hath been reveal'd
 Not of Earth onely but of highest Heav'n.

To

BOOK VIII. *Paradise Lost*. 197

To whom thus *Adam* cleerd of doubt, repli'd.
 How fully hast thou satisfi'd mee, pure
 Intelligence of Heav'n, Angel serene,
 And freed from intricacies, taught to live,
 The easiest way, nor with perplexing thoughts
 To interrupt the sweet of Life, from which
 God hath bid dwell farr off all anxious cares,
 And not molest us, unless we our selves
 Seek them with wandring thoughts, and notions vain.
 But apt the Mind or Fancie is to roave
 Uncheckt, and of her roaving is no end ;
 Till warn'd, or by experience taught, she learne,
 That not to know at large of things remote
 From use, obscure and suttle, but to know
 That which before us lies in daily life,
 Is the prime Wisdome, what is more, is fume,
 Or emptiness, or fond impertinence,
 And renders us in things that most concerne
 Unpractis'd, unprepar'd, and still to seek.
 Therefore from this high pitch let us descend
 A lower flight, and speak of things at hand
 Useful, whence haply mention may arise
 Of something not unseasonable to ask
 By sufferance, and thy wonted favour deign'd.
 Thee I have heard relating what was don
 Ere my remembrance : now hear mee relate
 My Storie, which perhaps thou hast not heard :
 And Day is yet not spent ; till then thou seest
 How suttly to detain thee I devise,
 Inviting thee to hear while I relate,
 Fond, were it not in hope of thy reply :
 For while I sit with thee, I seem in Heav'n,
 And sweeter thy discourse is to my care
 Than Fruits of Palm-tree pleasantest to thirst

198 **Paradise Lost. BOOK VIII.**

And hunger both, from labour, at the houre
Of sweet repast; they satiate, and soon fill,
Though pleasant, but thy words with Grace Divine
Imbu'd, bring to thir sweetness no satietie.

To whom thus *Raphael* answer'd heav'nly meek.
Nor are thy lips ungraceful, Sire of men,
Nor tongue ineloquent; for God on thee
Abundantly his gifts hath also pour'd
Inward and outward both, his image faire:
Speaking or mute all comliness and grace
Attends thee, and each word, each motion formes,
Nor less think wee in Heav'n of thee on Earth
Then of our fellow servant, and inquire
Gladly into the wayes of God with Man:
For God we see hath honour'd thee, and set
On Man his Equal Love: say therefore on;
For I that Day was absent, as befell,
Bound on a voyage uncouth and obscure,
Farr on excursion toward the Gates of Hell;
Squar'd in full Legion (such command we had)
To see that none thence issu'd forth a spie,
Or enemie, while God was in his work,
Least hee incens'd at such eruption bold,
Destruction with Creation might have mixt,
Not that they durst without his leave attempt,
But us he sends upon his high behests
For state, as Sovran King, and to enure
Our prompt obedience. Fast we found, fast shut
The dismal Gates, and barricado'd strong;
But long ere our approaching heard within
Noise, other then the sound of Dance or Song,
Torment, and loud lament, and furious rage.
Glad we return'd up to the coasts of Light
Ere Sabbath Eev'ning: so we had in charge.

But

BOOK VIII. *Paradise Lost.* 199

But thy relation now ; for I attend,
Pleas'd with thy words no less then thou with mine.
So spake the Godlike Power, and thus our Sire.
For Man to tell how human Life began
Is hard ; for who himself beginning knew ?
Desire with thee still longer to converse
Induc'd me. As new wak't from soundest sleep
Soft on the flourie herb I found me laid
In Balmie Sweat, which with his Beames the Sun
Soon dri'd, and on the reaking moisture fed.
Strait toward Heav'n my wondring Eyes I turnd,
And gaz'd a while the ample Skie, till rais'd
By quick instinctive motion up I sprung,
As thitherward endeavoring, and upright
Stood on my feet ; about me round I saw
Hill, Dale, and shadie Woods, and sunnie Plaines,
And liquid Lapse of murmuring Streams ; by these,
Creatures that livd, and movd, and walk'd, or flew,
Birds on the branches warbling ; all things smil'd,
With fragrance and with joy my heart oreflow'd.
My self I then perus'd, and Limb by Limb
Survey'd, and sometimes went, and sometimes ran
With supple joints, and lively vigour led :
But who I was, or where, or from what cause,
Knew not ; to speak I tri'd, and forthwith spake,
My Tongue obey'd and readily could name
What e're I saw. Thou Sun, said I, faire Light,
And thou enlight'nd Earth, so fresh and gay,
Ye Hills and Dales, ye Rivers, Woods, and Plaines,
And ye that live and move, fair Creatures, tell,
Tell, if ye saw, how came I thus, how here ?
Not of my self ; by some great Maker then,
In goodness and in power præeminent ;
Tell me, how may I know him, how adore,

From

From whom I have that thus I move and live,
 And feel that I am happier then I know.
 While thus I call'd, and stray'd I knew not whither,
 From where I first drew Aire, and first beheld
 This happie Light, when answer none return'd,
 On a green shady Bank profuse of Flours
 Pensive I fate me down; there gentle sleep
 First found me, and with soft oppression seiz'd
 My droused sense, untroubld, though I thought
 I then was passing to my former state
 Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve:
 When suddenly stood at my Head a dream,
 Whose inward apparition gently mov'd
 My fancy to believe I yet had being,
 And liv'd: One came, methought, of shape Divine,
 And said, thy Mansion wants thee, *Adam*, rise,
 First Man, of Men innumerable ordain'd
 First Father, call'd by thee I come thy Guide
 To the Garden of blis, thy seat prepar'd.
 So saying, by the hand he took me rais'd,
 And over Fields and Waters, as in Aire
 Smooth sliding without step, last led me up
 A woodie Mountain; whose high top was plaine,
 A Circuit wide, enclos'd, with goodliest Trees
 Planted, with Walks, and Bowers, that what I saw
 Of Earth before scarce pleasant seem'd. Each Tree
 Load'n with fairest Fruit that hung to the Fye
 Tempting, stirr'd in me sudden appetite
 To pluck and eate; whereat I wak'd, and found
 Before mine Eyes all real, as the dream
 Had lively shadow'd: Here had new begun.
 My wandering, had not hee who was my Guide
 Uphither, from among the Trees appear'd
 Presence Divine. Rejoycing, but with aw

BOOK VIII. *Paradise Lost.* 201

In adoration at his feet I fell (am,
Submits : he rear'd me, and Whom thou soughtst I
Said mildly, Author of all this thou seest
Above, or round about thee or beneath.
This Paradise I give thee, count it thine
To Till and keep, and of the Fruit to eat :
Of every Tree that in the Garden grows
Eat freely with glad heart ; fear here no dearth ;
But of the Tree whose operation brings
Knowledge of good and ill, which I have set
The Pledge of thy Obedience and thy Faith,
Amid the Garden by the Tree of Life,
Remember what I warne thee, shun to taste,
And shun the bitter consequence : for know,
The day thou eat'st thereof, my sole command
Transgrest, inevitably thou shalt dye ;
From that day mortal, and this happie State
Shalt loose, expell'd from hence into a World
Of woe and sorrow. Sternly he pronounc'd
The rigid interdiction, which resounds
Yet dreadful in mine eare, though in my choice
Not to incur ; but soon his cleer aspect
Return'd and gracious purpose thus renew'd.
For onely these fair bounds, but all the Earth
To thee and to thy Race I give ; as Lords
Possess it, and all things that therein live,
Or live in Sea, or Aire, Beast, Fish, and Fowle.
In signe whereof each Bird and Beast behold
After thir kindes ; I bring them to receave
From thee thir Names, and pay thee fealtie
With low subjection ; understand the same
Of Fish within thir watry residence
Not hither summon'd, since they cannot change
Thir Element to draw the thinner Aire.

As

202 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK VIII.

As thus he spake, each Bird and Beast behold
 Approaching two and two, These cowering low
 With blandishment, each Bird stoop'd on his wing.
 I nam'd them, as they pass'd, and understood
 Thir Nature, with such knowledg God endu'd
 My sudden apprehension : but in these
 I found not what me thought I wanted still ;
 And to the Heav'nly vision thus presum'd.

O by what name, for thou above all these,
 Above mankind, or aught then mankind higher,
 Surpass'est far my naming, how may I
 Adore thee, Author of this Universe,
 And all this good to man, for whose well being
 So amply, and with hands so liberal
 Thou hast provided all things but with mee
 I see not who partakes. In solitude
 What happiness, who can enjoy alone,
 Or all enjoying, what contentment find ?
 Thus I presumptuous ; and the vision bright,
 As with a smile more bright'nd, thus repli'd.

What call'st thou solitude, is not the Earth
 With various living creatures, and the Aire
 Replenisht, and all these at thy command
 To come and play before thee, know'st thou not
 Thir language and thir wayes, they also know,
 And reason not contemptibly ; with these
 Find pastime, and beare rule ; thy Realm is large,
 So spake the Universal Lord, and seem'd
 So ordering. I with leave of speech implor'd,
 And humble deprecation thus repli'd.

Let not my words offend thee, Heav'nly Power,
 My Maker, be propitious while I speak.
 Hast thou not made me here thy substitute,
 And these inferiour farr beneath me set ?

Among

Among unequals what society
 Can sort, what harmony or true delight?
 Which must be mutual, in proportion due
 Giv'n and receiv'd; but in disparity
 The one intense, the other still remiss
 Cannot well suit with either, but soon prove
 Tedious alike: Of fellowship I speak
 Such as I seek, fit to participate
 All rational delight, wherein the brute
 Cannot be human consort; they rejoyce
 Each with thir kind, Lion with Lioness;
 So fitly them in pairs thou hast combin'd;
 Much less can Bird with Beast, or Fish with Fowle
 So well converse, nor with the Ox the Ape;
 Wors then can man with Beast, and least of all.
 Whereto th' Almighty answer'd, not displeas'd.
 A nice and suttel happiness I see
 Thou to thy self propos'st, in the choice
 Of thy Associates, *Adam*, and wilt taste
 No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitary.
 What think'st thou then of me, and this my State,
 Seem I to thee sufficiently possess'd
 Of happiness, or not? who am alone
 From all Eternity, for none I know
 Second to me or like, equal much less.
 How have I then with whom to hold converse
 Save with the Creatures which I made, and those
 To me inferiour, infinite descents
 Beneath what other Creatures are to thee?
 He ceas'd, I lowly answer'd. To attain
 The highth and depth of thy Eternal wayes
 All human thoughts come short, Supream of things;
 Thou in thy self art perfect, and in thee
 Is no deficiency found; not so is Man,
 Nor in degree, the cause of his desire

By

104 *Paradise Lost.* Book VIII.

By conversation with his like to help,
 Or solace his defects. No need that thou
 Shouldst propagat, already infinite ;
 And through all numbers absolute, though One ;
 But Man by number is to manifest
 His single imperfection, and beget
 Like of his like, his Image multipli'd,
 In unity defective, which requires
 Collateral love, and dearest amity.
 Thou in thy secrecie although alone,
 Best with thy self accompani'd, seekst not
 Social communication, yet so pleas'd,
 Canst raise thy Creature to what highth thou wilt
 Of Union or Communion, desir'd ;
 I by conversing cannot these erect
 From prone, nor in thir wayes complacence find.
 Thus I embold'nd spake, and freedom us'd
 Permissive, and acceptance found, which gain'd
 This answer from the gracious voice Divine.

Thus farr to try thee, *Adam*, I was pleas'd,
 And find thee knowing not of Beasts alone,
 Which thou hast rightly nam'd, but of thy self,
 Expressing well the spirit within thee free,
 My Image, not imparted to the Brute,
 Whose fellowship therefore unmeet for thee
 Good reason was thou freely shouldst dislike,
 And be so minded still ; I, ere thou spak'st,
 Knew it not good for Man to be alone,
 And no such company as then thou saw'st
 Intended thee for tryal onely brought,
 To see how thou couldst judg'd of fit and meet :
 What next I bring shall please thee, be assur'd,
 Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self,
 Thy wish exactly to thy hearts desire.

He ended, or I heard no more, for now

My earthly by his heavenly overpowered,
 Which it had long stood under, streind to the hight
 In that celestial Colloquy sublime,
 As with an object that excels the sense,
 Dazl'd and spent, sunk down, and sought repair
 Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, call'd
 By Nature as in aide, and clos'd mine eyes.
 Mine eyes he clos'd, but op'n left the Cell
 Of Fancy my internal sight, by which
 Abstract as in a transe methought I saw,
 Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the shape
 Still glorious before whom awake I stood,
 Who stooping op'nd my left side, and took
 From thence a Rib, with cordial spirits warm,
 And life-blood streaming fresh; wide was the wound;
 But suddenly with flesh fill'd up and heal'd :
 The Rib he form'd and fashion'd with his hands ;
 Under his forming hands a Creature grew,
 Manlike, but different Sex, so lovely fair,
 That what seem'd fair in all the world seem'd now
 Mean, or in her summd up, in her contain'd
 And in her looks which from that time infus'd
 Sweetness into my heart, unselt before,
 And into all things from her Aire inspir'd
 The spirit of love and amorous delight.
 She disappear'd, and left me dark, I wak'd
 To find her, or for ever to deplore
 Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure :
 When out of hope, behold her not far off,
 Such as I saw her in my dream, adornd
 With what all Earth or Heaven could bestow
 To make her amiable : On she came,
 Led by her Heav'nly Maker, though unseen,
 And guided by his voice, nor uninform'd
 Of nuptial Sanctity and marriage Rites :

Grace

306 *Paradise Lost. Book VIII.*

Grace was in all her steps, Heav'n in her Eye,
In every gesture dignity and love.
I over-joyd could not forbear aloud.

This turn hath made amends; thou hast fulfill'd
Thy words, Creator bounteous and benigne,
Giver of all things fair, but fairest this
Of all thy Gifts, nor enviest. I now see
Bone of my Bone, Flesh of my Flesh, my Self
Before me; Woman is her Name, of Man
Extracted; for this cause he shall forgo
Father and Mother, and to his Wife adhere;
And they shall be one Flesh, one Heart, one Soul.

She heard me thus, and though divinely brought,
Yet Innocence and Virgin Modesty,
Her vertue and the conscience of her worth,
That would be wood, and not unsought be won,
Not obvious, not obtrusive, but retir'd,
The more desirable, or to say all,
Nature her self, though pure of sinful thought,
Wrought in her so, that seeing me, she turn'd;
I follow'd her, she what was Honour knew,
And with obsequious Majesty approv'd
My pleaded reason. To the Nuptial Bowre
I led her blushing like the Morn: all Heav'n,
And happy Constellations on that hour
Shed thir selectest influence; the Earth
Gave sign of gratulation, and each Hill;
Joyous the Birds; fresh Gales and gentle Aires
Whisper'd it to the Woods, and from their wings
Flung Rose, flung Odours from the spicy Shrub,
Disporting, till the amorous Bird of Night
Sung spousal, and bid haste the Evening Starr
On his Hill top, to light the bridal Lamp.
Thus have I told thee all my State, and brought
My Story to the sum of earthly bliss

Which

Which I enjoy, and must confesse to find
 In all things else delight indeed, but such
 As us'd or not, works in the mind no change,
 Nor vehement desire, these delicacies
 I mean of Taste, Sight, Smell, Herbs, Fruits, and Flours,
 Walks, and the melodie of Birds; but here
 Farr otherwise, transported I behold,
 Transported touch; here passion first I felt,
 Commotion strange, in all enjoyments else
 Superiour and unmov'd, here onely weake
 Against the charm of Beauties powerful glance;
 Or Nature faild in mee, and left some part
 Not proofenough such Object to sustain,
 Or from my side subducting, took perhaps
 More then enough; at least on her bestow'd
 Too much of Ornament, in outward shew
 Elaborate, of inward less exact.
 For well I understand in the prime end
 Of Nature her th' inferiour, in the mind
 And inward Faculties, which most excell,
 In outward also her resembling less
 His Image who made both, and less expressing
 The character of that Dominion giv'n
 Ore other Creatures; yet when I approach
 Her loveliness, so absolute she seems
 And in her self compleat, so well to know
 Her own, that what she wills to do or say,
 Seems wisest, vertuousest, discreetest, best;
 All higher knowledge in her presence falls
 Degraded: Wisdom in discourse with her
 Looses discount'nanc't, and like folly shewes;
 Authority and Reason on her waite,
 As one intended first, not after made
 Occasionally; and to consummate all,
 Greatness of mind and nobleness thir seat

Build in her loveliest, and create an awe
About her, as a guard Angelic plac't.
To whom the Angel with contracted brow.

Accuse not Nature, she hath don her part ;
Do thou but thine, and be not diffident
Of Wisdom, she deserts thee not, if thou
Dismis not her, when most thou needst her nigh,
By attributing, overmuch to things
Less excellent, as thou thy self perceav'st.
For what admir'st thou, what transports thee so,
An outside ? fair no doubt, and worthy well
Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love,
Not thy subjection : weigh with her thy self ;
Then value : Oft times nothing profits more
Then self esteem, grounded on just and right
Well manag'd ; of that skill the more thou know'st,
The more she will acknowledge thee her Head,
And to realities yield all her shows :
Made so adorn for thy delight the more,
So awful, that with honour thou maist love
Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least wise.
But if the sense of touch whereby mankind
Is propagated seem such dear delight
Beyond all other, think the same voutsaft
To Cattel and each Beast ; which would not be
To them made common and divulg'd, if aught
Therein enjoy'd were worthy to subdue
The Soule of Man, or passion in him move.
What higher in her societie thou find'st
Attractive, human, rational, love still ;
In loving thou dost well, in passion not,
VWherein true Love consists not ; love refines
The thoughts, and heart enlarges, hath his seat
In Reason, and is judicious, is the scale
By which to Heav'nly Love thou maist ascend,

Not

Not sunk in carnal pleasure, for which cause
Among the Beasts no Mate for thee was found.

To whom thus half abash'd *Adam* repli'd.
Neither her out-side form'd so fair, nor aught
In procreation common to all kinds
(Though higher of the genial Bed by far,
And with mysterious reverence I deem)
So much delights me as those graceful acts,
Those thousand decencies that daily flow
From all her words and actions mixt with Love
And sweet compliance, which declare unfeign'd
Union of Mind, or in us both one Soule;
Harmonie to behold in wedded pair
More grateful then harmonious sound to the ear.
Yet these subject not; I to thee disclose
What inward thence I feel, not therefore soild,
Who meet with various objects, from the sense
Variously representing; yet still free
Approve the best, and follow what I approve.
To love thou blam'st me not, for love thou saist
Leads up to Heav'n, is both the way and guide;
Bear with me then, if lawful what I ask;
Love not the heav'nly Spirits, and how thir Love
Express they, by looks onely, or do they mix
Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch?

To whom the Angel with a smile thar glow'd
Celestial rosie red, Loves proper hue,
Answer'd, Let it suffice thee that thou know'st
Is happie, and without Love no happiness.
Whatever pure thou in thy body enjoy'st
(And pure thou wert created) we enjoy
Eminence, and obstacle find none
Of membrane, joynt, or limb, exclusive barrs:
Easier then Air with Air, if Spirits embrace,
Total they mix, Union of Pure with Pure

P

Desiring;

210 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK VIII.

Desiring; nor restrain'd conveyance need
 As Flesh to mix with Flesh, or Soule with Soule.
 But I can now no more; the parting Sun
 Beyond the Earths green Cape and verdant Isles
Hesperian sets, my Signal to depart.
 Be strong, live happie, and love, but first of all
 Him whom to love is to obey, and keep
 His great command; take heed least Passion sway
 Thy Judgement to do aught, which else free Will
 Would not admit; thine and of all thy Sons
 The weal or woe in thee is plac't; beware.
 I in thy persevering shall rejoyce,
 And all the Blest: stand fast; to stand or fall
 Free in thine own Arbitrement it lies.
 Perfet within, no outward aid require;
 And all temptation to transgress repel.

So saying, he arose; whom *Adam* thus
 Follow'd with benediction. Since to part,
 Go Heav'nly Guest, Ethereal Messenger,
 Sent from whose Sovran Goodness I adore,
 Gentle to me and affable hath been
 Thy condescension, and shall be honour'd ever
 With grateful Memory: thou to Mankind
 Be good and friendly still, and oft return:
 So parted they, the Angel up to Heav'n
 From the thick shade, and *Adam* to his Bowre.

The End of the Eighth Book.

Paradise

Paradise Lost.

BOOK IX.

THE ARGUMENT.

Satan having compass'd the Earth, with meditated guile returns as a mist by Night into Paradise, enters into the Serpent sleeping, Adam and Eve in the Morning go forth to their labours, which Eve proposes to divide in several places, each labouring apart : Adam consents not, alledging the danger, lest that Enemy, of whom they were forewarn'd, should attempt her found alone : Eve loath to be thought not circumspect or firm enough, urges her going apart, the rather desirous to make tryal of her strength ; Adam at last yields : The Serpent finds her alone ; his subtle approach, first gazing, then speaking, with much flattery extolling Eve above all other Creatures. Eve wondring to hear the Serpent speak, asks how he attain'd to humane speech and such understanding not till now ; the Serpent answers, that by tasting of a certain Tree in the Garden he attain'd both to Speech and Reason, till then void of both : Eve requires him

to bring her to that Tree, and finds it to be the Tree of Knowledge forbidden: The Serpent now grown bolder, with many wiles and arguments induces her at length to eat; she pleas'd with the taste deliberates a while whether to impart thereof to Adam or not, at last brings him of the Fruit, relates what perswaded her to eat thereof: Adam at first amaz'd, but perceiving her lost, resolves through vehemence of love to perish with her; and extenuating the trespass eats also of the Fruit: The Effects thereof in them both; they seek to cover thir nakedness; then fall to variance and accusation of one another.

NO more of talk where God or Angel Guest
 With Man, as with his Friend, familiar us'd
 To sit indulgent, and with him partake
 Rural repast, permitting him the while
 Venial discourse unblam'd: I now must change
 Those Notes to Tragic; foul distrust, and breach
 Disloyal on the part of Man, revolt,
 And disobedience: On the part of Heav'n
 Now alienated, distance and distaste,
 Anger and just rebuke, and judgement giv'n,
 That brought into this World a World of woe,
 Sinne and her shadow Death, and Miseric
 Deaths Harbinger: Sad task, yet Argument
 Not less but more Heroic then the wrauth
 Of stern Achilles on his Foe pursu'd
 Thrice Fugitive about Troy Wall; or rage
 Of Turnus for Lavinia disespous'd,
 Or Neptun's ire or Juno's, that so long
 Perplex'd the Greek and Cytherea's Son;
 If answerable style I can obtaine
 Of my Celestial Patroness, who deignes

Her

BOOK IX. *Paradise Lost.* 113

Her nightly visitation unimplor'd,
 And dictates to me slumbring, or inspires
 Easie my unpremeditated Verse.
 Since first this Subject for Heroic Song
 Pleas'd me long choos'ing, and beginning late;
 Not sedulous by Nature to indite
 Warrs, hitherto the onely Argument
 Heroic deem'd, chief maistrick to dissect
 With long and tedious havoc fabl'd Knights
 In Battels feign'd; the better fortitude
 Of Patience and Heroic Martyrdom
 Unsung; or to describe Races and Games,
 Or Tilting Furniture, emblazon'd Shields,
 Impreses quaint, Caparisons and Steeds;
 Bases and Tinsel Trappings, gorgeous Knights
 At Joust and Torneament; then marshal'd Feast
 Serv'd up in Hall with Sewers, and Seneschals;
 The skill of Artifice or Office mean,
 Not that which justly gives Heroic name
 To Person or to Poem. Mee of these
 Nor skill'd nor studious, higher Argument
 Remaines, sufficient of it self to raise
 That Name, unless an age too late, or cold
 Climat, or Years damp my intended wing
 Deprest, and much they may, if all be mine,
 Not Hers who brings it nightly to my Ear.

The Sun was sunk, and after him the Starr
 Of *Hesperus*, whose Office is to bring
 Twilight upon the Earth, short Arbitrer
 Twixt Day and Night, and now from end to end
 Nights Hemisphere had veild the Horizon round:
 When *Satan* who late fled before the threats
 Of *Gabriel* out of *Eden*, now improv'd
 In meditated fraud and malice, bent

214 *Paradise Lost*. BOOK IX.

On mans destruction, maugre what might hap
 Of heavier on himself, fearless return'd.
 By Night he fled, and at Midnight return'd
 From compassing the Earth, cautious of day,
 Since *Uriel* Regent of the Sun descri'd
 His entrance, and forewarnd the Cherubim
 That kept thir watch; thence full of anguish driv'n,
 The space of seven continu'd Nights he rode
 With darkness, thrice the Equinoctial Line
 He circl'd, four times cross'd the Carr of Night
 From Pole to Pole, traversing each Colure;
 On the eighth return'd, and on the Coast averse
 From entrance or Cherubic VWatch, by stealth
 Found unsuspected way. There was a place,
 Now not, though Sin, not Time, first wraught the
 VWhere *Tigris* at the foot of Paradise (change,
 Into a Gulf shot under ground, till part
 Rose up a Fountain by the Tree of Life;
 In with the River sunk, and with it rose
 Satan involv'd in rising Mist, then sought
 VWhere to lie hid: Sea he had searcht and Land
 From *Eden* over *Pontus*, and the Poole
Mæotis up beyond the River *Ob*;
 Downward as farr *Antartic*; and in length
 West from *Orontes* to the Ocean barr'd
 At *Darien*, thence to the Land where flowes
Ganges and *Indus*: thus the Orb he roam'd
 With narrow search; and with inspection deep
 Consider'd every Creature, which of all
 Most opportune might serve his Wiles, and found
 The Serpent fittest Beast of all the Field.
 Him after long debate, irresolute
 Of thoughts revolv'd, his final sentence chose
 Fit Vessel, fittest Imp of fraud, in whom

To

BOOK IX. *Paradise Lost.* 215

To enter, and his dark suggestions hide
From sharpest sight: for in the wilie Snake,
Whatever sleights none would suspicious mark,
As from his wit and native suttletie
Proceeding, which in other Beasts observ'd
Doubt might beget of Diabolic power
Active within beyond the sense of brute,
Thus he resolv'd, but first from inward griefe
His bursting passion into plaints thus pour'd:

O Earth, how like to Heav'n, if not prefer'd
More justly, Seat worthier of Gods, as built
With second thoughts, reforming what was old!
For what God after better worse would build?
Terrestrial Heav'n, danc't round by other Heav'ns
That shine, yet bear thir bright officious Lamps,
Light above Light, for thee alone, as seems,
In thee concentring all thir precious beams
Of sacred influence: As God in Heav'n
Is Center, yet extends to all, so thou
Centring receav'st from all those Orbes; in thee,
Not in themselves, all thir known vertue appeers
Productive in Herb, Plant, and nobler birth
Of Creatures animate with gradual life
Of Growth, Sense, Reason, all summ'd up in Man.
With what delight could I have walkt thee round,
If I could joy in aught, sweet interchange
Of Hill, and Vallie, Rivers, Woods and Plaines,
Now Land, now Sea, & Shores with Forrest crownd,
Rocks, Dens, and Caves; but I in none of these
Find place or refuge; and the more I see
Pleasures about me, so much more I feel
Torment within me, as from the hateful siege
Of contraries; all good to me becomes
Bane, and in Heav'n much worse would be my state.

216 *Paradise Lost.* Book IX.

But neither here seek I, no nor in Heav'n
 To dwell, unless by mainstring Heav'ns Supream;
 Nor hope to be my self less miserable
 By what I seek, but others to make such
 As I, though thereby worse to me redound:
 For onely in destroying I find ease
 To my relentless thoughts; and him destroyd,
 Or won to what may work his utter loss,
 For whom all this was made, all this will soon
 Follow, as to him linkt in weal or woe,
 In wo then; that destruction wide may range:
 To mee shall be the glorie sole among
 The infernal Powers, in one day to have marr'd
 What he *Almightie* styl'd, six Nights and Days
 Continu'd making, and who knows how long
 Before had bin contriving, though perhaps
 Not longer then since I in one Night freed
 From servitude inglorious welnigh half
 Th' Angelic Name, and thinner left the throng
 Of his Adorers: hee to be aveng'd,
 And to repaire his numbers thus impair'd,
 Whether such vertue spent of old now faild
 More Angels to Create, if they at least
 Are his Created, or to spite us more,
 Determin'd to advance into our room
 A Creature form'd of Earth, and him endow,
 Exalted from so base original,
 With Heav'nly spoils, our spoils: What he decreed
 He effected; Man he made, and for him built
 Magnificent this World, and Earth his seat,
 Him Lord pronounc'd, and, O indignitie!
 Subjected to his service Angel wings,
 And flaming Ministers to watch and tend
 Thir earthy Charge: Of these the vigilance

IX. **BOOK IX. Paradise Lost. 317**

I dread, and do elude, thus wrapt in mist
 Of midnight vapor glide obscure, and pry
 In every Bush and Brake, where hap may finde
 The Serpent sleeping, in whose mazy foulds
 To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.
 O soule descent! that I who erst contended
 With Gods to sit the highest, am now constraind
 Into a Beast, and mixt with bestial slime,
 This essence to incarnate and imbrute,
 That to the hight of Deity aspir'd;
 But what will not ambition and Revenge
 Descend to? who aspires must down as low
 As high he soard, obnoxious first or last
 To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,
 Bitter ere long back on it self recoiles;
 Let it; I reck not, so it light well aim'd,
 Since higher I fall short, on him who next
 Provokes my envy, this new Favorite
 Of Heav'n, this Man of Clay, Son of despise,
 Whom us the more to spight his Maker rais'd
 From dust: spite then with spite is best repaid.

So saying, through each Thicket Danck or Dry,
 Like a black mist low creeping, he held on
 His midnight search, where soonest he might finde
 The Serpent: him fast sleeping soon he found
 In Labyrinth of many a round self-rowld,
 His head the midst, well stor'd with futtle wiles:
 Not yet in horrid shade or dismal Den,
 Nor nocent yet, but on the grassie Herb
 Fearless unfeard he slept: in at his Mouth
 The Devil enterd, and his brutal sense,
 In heart or head, possessing soon inspir'd
 With act intelligential; but his sleep
 Disturbd not, waiting close th' approach of Morn.

Now

Now when as sacred Light began to dawn
 In *Eden* on the humid Flours, that breathd
 Thir morning incense, when all things that breath,
 From th' Earths great Altar send up silent praise
 To the Creator, and his Nostrils fill
 With grateful Smell, forth came the human pair
 And joynd thir vocal Worship to the Quire
 Of Creatures wanting voyce, that done, partake
 The Season, prime for sweetest Sents and Aires :
 Then commune how that day they best may ply
 Thir growing work : for much their work outgrew
 The hands dispatch of two Gardning so wide.
 And *Eve* first to her Husband thus began.

Adam, well may we labour still to dress
 This Garden, still to tend Plant, Herb and Flour,
 Our pleasant task enjoynd, but till more hands
 Aid us, the work under our labour grows,
 Luxurious by restraint, what we by day
 Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind,
 One Night or two with wanton growth derides
 Tending to wilde. Thou therefore now advise
 Or bear what to my minde first thoughts present,
 Let us divide our Labours, thou where choice
 Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind
 The Woodbine round this Arbour, or direct
 The clasping Ivy where to climb, while I
 In yonder Spring of Roses intermixt
 With Myrtle, find what to redress till Noon :
 For while so near each other thus all day
 Our task we choose, what wonder if so near
 Looks intervene and smiles, or object new
 Casual discourse draw on, which intermits
 Our dayes work brought to little, though begun
 Early, and the hour of Supper comes unearn'd.

To

IX. Book IX. Paradise Lost. 219

To whom mild answer *Adam* thus return'd.
 Sole *Eve*, Associate sole, to me beyond
 Compare above all living Creatures dear,
 Well hast thou motion'd, well thy thoughts imployd
 How we might best fulfill the work which here
 God hath assign'd us, nor of me shalt pass
 Unprais'd: for nothing lovelier can be found
 In Woman, then to study household good,
 And good works in her Husband to promote.
 Yet not so strictly hath our Lord impos'd
 Labour, as to debar us when we need
 Refreshment, whether food or talk between,
 Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse
 Of looks and smiles, for smiles from Reason flow,
 To brute deny'd, and are of Love the food,
 Love not the lowest end of human life.
 For not to irksom toile, but to delight
 He made us, and delight to Reason joyn'd.
 These Paths & Bowers doubt not but our joynt hands
 Will keep from Wildernesse with ease, as wide
 As we need walk, till younger hands ere long
 Assist us: But if much converse perhaps
 Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield.
 For solitude sometimes is best society,
 And short retirement urges sweet return.
 But other doubt possesses me, least harm
 Befall thee sever'd from me; for thou know'st
 What hath bin warn'd us, what malicious Foe
 Envyng our happiness, and of his own
 Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame
 By sly assault; and somewhere nigh at hand
 Watches no doubt, with greedy hope to find
 His wish and best advantage, us asunder,
 Hopeless to circumvent us joyn'd, where each

Te

To other speedy aide might lend at need;
 Whether his first design be to withdraw
 Our fealty from God, or to disturb
 Conjugal Love, then which perhaps no bliss
 Enjoy'd by us excites his envy more:
 Or this, or worse, leave not the faithful side
 That gave thee being, still shades thee and protects
 The Wife, where danger or dishonour lurks,
 Safest and seemliest by her Husband staies,
 Who guards her, or with her the worst endures.
 To whom the Virgin Majesty of *Eve*,
 As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,
 With sweet austere composure thus reply'd,

 Ospring of Heav'n and Earth, and all Earth
 That such an Enemy we have, who seeks (Lord
 Our ruin, both by thee inform'd I learn,
 And from the parting Angel over-heard
 As in a shady nook I stood behind,
 Just then return'd at shut of Eevening Flours,
 But that thou shouldst my firmness therefore doubt
 To God or thee, because we have a foe
 May tempt it, I expected not to hear.
 His violence thou fearst not, being such
 As wee, not capable of death or pain,
 Can either not receive, or can repell.
 His fraud is then thy fear, which plain inferrs
 Thy equal fear that my firm Faith and Love
 Can by his fraud be shak'n or seduc't;
 Thoughts, which how found they harbour in thy breast
Adam, misthought of her to thee so dear?

 To whom with healing words *Adam* reply'd.
 Daughter of God and Man, immortal *Eve*,
 For such thou art, from sin and blame entire:
 Not diffident of thee do I dissuade

Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid
 Th' attempt it self, intended by our Foe.
 For he who tempts, though in vain, at least asperſes
 The tempted with diſhonour ſoul, ſuppos'd
 Not incorruptible of Faith, not proof
 Againſt temptation: thou thy ſelf with ſcorne
 And anger wouldſt reſent the offer'd wrong,
 Though ineffectual ſound: miſdeem not then;
 If ſuch affront I labour to avert
 From thee alone, which on us both at once
 The Enemy, though bold, will hardly dare,
 Or daring, fiſt on mee th' aſſault ſhall light.
 Nor thou his malice and falſe guile concern;
 Suttle he needs muſt be, who could ſeduce
 Angels, nor think ſuperfluous others aid.
 I from the influence of thy looks receive
 Acceſs in every Vertue, in thy ſight
 More wiſe, more watchful, ſtronger, if need were
 Of outward ſtrength; while ſhame, thou looking on,
 Shame to be overcome or over-reacht
 Would utmoſt vigor raiſe, and rais'd unite.
 Why ſhouldſt not thou like ſenſe within thee feel
 When I am preſent, and thy trial chooſe
 With me, beſt witneſs of thy Vertue tri'd?

So ſpake domeſtick *Adam* in his care
 And Matrimonial Love; but *Eve*, who thought
 Leſs attributed to her Faith ſincere,
 Thus her reply with accent ſweet renewd.

If this be our condition, thus to dwell
 In narrow circuit ſtrait'nd by a Foe,
 Suttle or violent, we not endu'd
 Single with like defence, wherever met,
 How are we happie, ſtill in fear of harm?
 But harm precedes not ſin: onely our Foe

Tempting

222 *Paradise Lost. Book IX.*

Tempting affronts us with his foul esteem
 Of our integritie: his foul esteem
 Sticks no dishonor on our Front, but turns
 Foul on himself; then wherefore shund or feard
 By us? who rather double honour gaine
 From his surmise prov'd false, find peace within,
 Favour from Heav'n, our witness from th' event.
 And what is Faith, Love, Vertue unassaid
 Alone, without exterior help sustaind?
 Let us not then suspect our happie State
 Left so imperfet by the Maker wise,
 As not secure to single or combin'd:
 Frail is our happiness, if this be so,
 And *Eden* were no *Eden* thus expos'd.

To whom thus *Adam* fervently replid.
 O Woman, best are all things as the will
 Of God ordain'd them; his creating hand
 Nothing imperfet or deficient left
 Of all that he Created, much less Man,
 Or aught that might his happie State secure,
 Secure from outward force; within himself
 The danger lies, yet lies within his power:
 Against his will he can receive no harme.
 But God left free the Will, for what obeyes
 Reason, is free, and Reason he made right,
 But bidher well beware, and still erect,
 Least by som faire appeering good surpris'd
 She dictate false, and misinforme the Will
 To do what God expressly hath forbid.
 Not then mistrust, but tender Love enjoynes,
 That I should mind thee off, and mind thou me.
 Firm we sublist, yet possible to swerve,
 Since Reason not impossibly may meet
 Some specious object by the Foe subordn,

And

X. **BOOK IX. Paradise Lost.** 221

And fall into deception unaware,
 Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warn'd.
 Seek not temptation then, which to avoid
 Were better, and most likeliest if from mee
 Thou sever not : Trial will come unsought.
 Wouldst thou approve thy constancie, approve
 First thy obedience ; th' other who can know,
 Not seeing thee attempted, who attest ?
 But if thou think, trial unsought may finde
 Us both securer then thus warn'd thou seemst,
 Go ; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more ;
 Go in thy native innocence, relie
 On what thou hast of vertue, summon all,
 For God towards thee hath done his part, do thine ;
 So spake the Patriarch of Mankinde, but *Eve*
 Persisted, yet submiss, though last, repli'd.

With thy permission then, and thus forewarn'd
 Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words
 Touch'd onely, that our trial, when least sought,
 May finde us both perhaps farr less prepar'd,
 The willinger I goe, nor much expect
 A Foe so proud will first the weaker seek ;
 So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse.
 Thus saying, from her Husbands hand her hand
 Soft she withdrew, and like a Wood-Nymph light
 Or *Dryad*, or of *Delia's* Traine,
 Betook her to the Groves, but *Delia's* self
 In gate surpass'd and Goddess-like deport,
 Though not as she with Bow and Quiver arm'd,
 But with such Gardning Tools as Art yet rude.
 Guileless of fire had form'd, or Angels brought.
 To *Pales*, or *Pomona* thus adorn'd,
 Likeliest she seem'd, *Pomona* when she fled
Persephone, or to *Ceres* in her Prime,

Yet

Yet Virgin of *Proserpina* from *Jove*,
 Her long with ardent look his eye pursu'd
 Delighted, but desiring more her stay.
 Oft he to her his charge of quick returne
 Repeated, thee to him as oft engag'd
 To be return'd by Noon amid the Bowre,
 And all things in best order to invite
 Noontide repast, or Afternoons repose.
 O much deceav'd, much failing, hapless *Eve*,
 Of thy presum'd return! event perverse!
 Thou never from that houre in Paradise
 Foundst either sweet repast, or sound repose;
 Such ambush hid among sweet Flours and Shades
 Waited with hellish rancour imminent
 To intercept thy way, or send thee back
 Despoild of Innocence, of Faith, of Bliss.
 For now and since first break of dawne the Fiend,
 Meer Serpent in appearance, forth was come,
 And on his Quest, where likeliest he might finde
 The onely two of Mankinde, but in them
 The whole included Race, his purpos'd prey.
 In Bowre and Field he sought, where any tuft
 Of Grove or Garden plot more pleasant lay,
 Thir tendance or Plantation for delight,
 By Fountain or by shadie Rivulet
 He sought them both, but wish'd his hap might find
Eve separate, he wish'd, but not with hope
 Of what so seldom chanc'd, when to his wish,
 Beyond his hope, *Eve* separate he spies,
 Veild in a Cloud of Fragrance, where she stood,
 Half spi'd, so thick the Roses bushing round
 About her glowd, oft stooping to support
 Each Flour of slender stalk, whose head though gay
 Carnation, Purple, Azure, or spect with Gold,

Hung

Hung drooping unsustaind, then she upstaies
 Gently with Mirtle hand, mindless the while,
 Her self, though fairest unsupported Flour,
 From her best prop so farr, and storm so nigh,
 Neerer he drew, and many a walk travers'd
 Of stareliest Covert, Cedar, Pine, or Palme,
 Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen
 Among thick-wov'n Arborers and Flours
 Imborderd on each Bank, the hand of Eve:
 Spot more delicious then those Gardens feign'd
 Or of reviv'd *Adonis*, or renown'd
Alcinous, host of old *Laertes* Son,
 Or that, not Mystic, where the Sapient King
 Held dalliance with his faire *Egyptian* Spouse.
 Much hee the Place admird, the Person more.
 As one who long in populous City pent,
 Where Houses thick and Sewers annoy the Aire;
 Forth issuing on a Summers Morn to breathe
 Among the pleasant Villages and Farmes
 Adjoynd, from each thing met conceaves delight,
 The smell of Grain, or tedded Grass, or Kine,
 Or Dairie, each rural sight, each rural sound;
 If chance with Nymph-like step fair Virgin pass,
 What pleasing seemd, for her now pleases more,
 She most, and in her look summs all Delight.
 Such pleasure took the Serpent to behold
 This Flourie Plat, the sweet recess of Eve
 Thus earlie, thus alone; her Heav'nly forme
 Angelic, but more soft, and Feminine,
 Her graceful Innocence, her every Aire
 Of gesture or lest action overaw'd
 His Malice, and with rapine sweet bereav'd
 His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought:
 That space the Evil One abstracted stood

226 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK IX.

From his own evil, and for the time remaind
 Stupidly good, of enmitie disarm'd,
 Of guile, of hate, of envie, of revenge;
 But the hot Hell that alwayes in him burnes,
 Though in mid Heav'n, soon ended his delight,
 And tortures him now more, the more he sees
 Of pleasure not for him ordain'd: then soon
 Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts
 Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites.

Thoughts, whither have ye led me, with what sweet
 Compulsion thus transported to forget
 What hither brought us, hate, nor love, nor hope
 Of Paradise for Hell, hope here to taste
 Of pleasure, but all pleasures to destroy,
 Save what is in destroying, other joy
 To me is lost. Then let me not let pass
 Occasion which now smiles, behold alone
 The Woman, opportune to all attempts,
 Her Husband, for I view far round, not nigh,
 Whose higher intellectual more I shun,
 And strength, of courage haughtie, and of limb
 Heroic built, though of terrestrial mould,
 Foe not formidable, exempt from wound,
 I not; so much hath Hell debas'd, and paine
 Infeebld me, to what I was in Heav'n.
 Shee fair, divinely fair, fit love for Gods,
 Not terrible, though terrour be in Love
 And beautie, nor approacht by stronger hate,
 Hate stronger, under shew of Love well feign'd,
 The way which to her ruin now I tend.

So spake the Enemie of Mankind, enclos'd
 In Serpent, Inmate bad, and toward *Eve*
 Address'd his way, not with indented wave,
 Prone on the ground, as since, but on his reare,

Circular

Circular base of rising foulds, that tound
Fould above fould a surging Maze, his Head
Crested aloft, and Carbuncle his Eyes;
With burnisht Neck of verdant Gold, erect
Amidst his circling Spires, that on the grass
Floted redundant: pleasing was his shape,
And lovely, never since of Serpent kind
Lovelier, not those that in *Illyria* chang'd
Hermione and *Cadmus*, or the God
In *Epidaurus*; nor to which transform'd
Ammonian Jove, or *Capitoline* was seen,
Hee with *Olympias*, this with her who bore
Scipio the highth of *Rome*. With tract oblique
At first, as one who sought access, but fear'd
To interrupt, side-long he works his way.
As when a Ship by skilful Steersman wrought
Nigh Rivers mouth or Foreland, where the Wind
Veres oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her Saile;
So varied hee, and of his tortuous Traine
Curld many a wanton wreath in sight of *Eve*,
To lure her Eye; shee busied heard the sound
Of rustling Leaves, but minded not, as us'd
To such disport before her through the Field,
From every Beast, more dutious at her call,
Then at *Cercean* call the Herd disguis'd.
Hee boulder now, uncall'd before her stood;
But as in gaze admiring: oft he bow'd
His turret Crest, and sleek enamel'd Neck.
Fawning, and lick'd the ground whereon she trod.
His gentle dumb expression turnd at length
The Eye of *Eve* to mark his play; he glad
Of her attention gain'd, with Serpent Tongue
Organic, or impulse of vocal Air,
His fraudulent tempration thus began,

Q²

Wonder

228 *Paradise Lost.* Book IX

Wonder not, Sovran Mistres, if perhaps
 Thou canst, who art sole Wonder, much less arm
 Thy looks, the Heav'n of mildness, with disdain,
 Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze
 Infatiate, I thus single, nor have fear'd
 Thy awful brow, more awful thus retir'd.
 Fairest resemblance of thy Maker faire,
 Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine
 By gift, and thy Celestial Beautie adore
 With ravishment beheld, there best beheld
 Where universally admir'd; but here
 In this enclosure wild, these Beasts among,
 Beholders rude, and shallow to discern
 Half what in thee is fair, one man except,
 Who sees thee? (and what is one?) who shouldst be
 A Goddess among Gods, ador'd and serv'd (seen
 By Angels numberless, thy daily Train.

So glos'd the Tempter, and his Proem tun'd;
 Into the Heart of *Eve* his words made way,
 Though at the voice much marveling; at length
 Not unamaz'd she thus in answer spake.
 What may this mean? Language of Man pronounc'd
 By Tongue of Brute, and human sense express'd?
 The first at lest of these I thought deni'd
 To Beasts, whom God on thir Creation-Day
 Created mute to all articulat sound;
 The latter I demurr, for in thir looks
 Much reason, and in thir actions oft appeers.
 Thee, Serpent, subtlest beast of all the field
 I knew, but not with human voice endu'd;
 Redouble then this miracle, and say,
 How cam'st thou speakable of mute, and how
 To me so friendly grown above the rest
 Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight?

Say,

BOOK IX. *Paradise Lost.* 229

Say, for such wonder claims attention due.

To whom the guileful Tempter thus reply'd.
Empress of this fair World, resplendent Eve,
Easie to mee it is to tell thee all (obeyd:
What thou commandst, and right thou shouldst be
I was at first as other Beasts that graze
The trodden Herb, of abject thoughts and low,
As was my food, nor aught but food discern'd
Or Sex, that apprehended nothing high:
Till on a day roaving the field, I chanc'd
A goodly Tree farr distant to behold
Loaden with fruit of fairest colours mixt,
Ruddie and Gold: I nearer drew to gaze;
When from the boughes a savourie odour blow'n,
Grateful to appetite, more pleas'd my sense
Then smell of sweetest Fennel or the Teats
Of Ewe or Goat dropping with Milk at Eeven,
Unsuickt of Lamb or Kid, that tend thir play.
To satisfie the sharp desire I had
Of tasting those fair Apples, I resolv'd
Not to deferr; hunger and thirst at once,
Powerful perswaders, quick'nd at the scent
Of that alluring fruit, urg'd me so keene.
About the mossie Trunk I wound me soon,
For high from ground the branches would require
Thy utmost reach or Adam's: Round the Tree
All other Beasts that saw, with like desire
Longing and envying stood, but could not reach,
Amid the Tree now got, where plenty hung
Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill
I spar'd not, for such pleasure till that hour
At Feed or Fountain never had I found.
Sated at length, ere long I might perceive
Strange alteration in me, to degree

230 **Paradise Lost. BOOK IX.**

Of Reason in my inward Powers, and Speech
 Wanted not long, though to his shape retain'd,
 Thenceforth to Speculations high or deep
 I turn'd my thoughts, and with capacious mind
 Considered all things visible in Heav'n,
 Or Earth, or Middle, all things fair and good ;
 But all that fair and good in thy Divine
 Semblance, and in thy Beauties heav'nly Ray
 United I beheld ; no Fair to thine
 Equivalent or second, which compell'd
 Mee thus, though importune perhaps, to come
 And gaze, and worship thee of right declar'd
 Sovran of Creatures, universal Dame.

So talk'd the spirited fly Snake ; and *Eve*
 Yet more amaz'd unwarie thus reply'd.

Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt
 The vertue of that Fruit, in thee first prov'd :
 But say, where grows the Tree, from hence how far ?
 For many are the Trees of God that grow
 In Paradise, and various, yet unknown
 To us, in such abundance lies our choice,
 As leaves a greater store of Fruit untoucht,
 Still hanging incorruptible, till men
 Grow up to this provision, and more hands
 Help to disburden Nature of her Bearth.

To whom the wilie Adder, blithe and glad.
 Empress, the way is readie, and not long,
 Beyond a row of Myrtles, on a Flat,
 Fast by a Fountain, one small Thicket past
 Of blowing Myrrh and Balme ; if thou accept
 My conduct, I can bring thee thither soon.

Lead then, said *Eve*. Hee leading swiftly rowld
 In tangles, and made intricate seem strait,
 To mischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy

Bright'ns

X. BOOK IX. Paradise Lost. 231

Bright'ns his Crest, and when a wandring Fire,
Compact of unctuous vapor, which the Night
Condenses, and the cold invirons round,
Kindl'd through agitation to a Flame,
Which oft, they say, some evil Spirit attends
Hovering and blazing with delusive Light,
Misleads th' amaz'd Night-wanderer from his way
To Boggs and Mires, and oft through Pond or Poole,
There swallow'd up and lost, from succour farr-
So glister'd the dire Snake, and into fraud
Led *Eve* our credulous Mother, to the Tree
Of prohibition, root of all our woe;
Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake.

Serpent, we might have spar'd our coming hither,
Fruitless to mee, though Fruit be here to excess,
The credit of whose vertue rest with thee,
Wondrous indeed, if cause of such effects.
But of this Tree we may not tast nor touch;
God so commanded, and left that Command
Sole Daughter of his voice; the rest, we live
Law to our selves, our Reason is our Law.

To whom the Tempter guilefully repli'd,
Indeed? hath God then said that of the Fruit
Of all these Garden Trees ye shall not eate,
Yet Lords declar'd of all in Earth or Aire?

To whom thus *Eve* yet sinless. Of the Fruit
Of each Tree, in the Garden we may eate,
But of the Fruit of this fair Tree amidst
The Garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eate
Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, least ye die. (bold

She scarce had said, though brief, when now more
The Tempter, but with shew of Zeale and Love
To Man, and indignation at his wrong,
New part puts on, and as to passion mov'd,

Q4

Fluctuats

Fluctuats disturb'd, yet comely and in act
 Rais'd, as of som great matter to begin.
 As when of old som Orator renound
 In *Athens* or free *Rome*, where Eloquence
 Flourish'd, since mute, to som great cause address't,
 Stood in himself collected, while each part,
 Motion, each act won audience ere the tongue,
 Sometimes in highth began, as no delay
 Of Preface brooking through his Zeal of Right.
 So standing, moving, or to highth up grown
 The Tempter all impassion'd thus began.

O Sacred, Wise, and Wisdom-giving Plant,
 Mother of Science, Now I feel thy Power
 Within me cleere; not only to discern
 Things in thir Causes, but to trace the wayes
 Of highest Agents, deem'd however wise.
 Queen of this Universe, doe not believe
 Those rigid threats of Death; ye shall not Die:
 How should ye? by the Fruit? it gives you Life
 To Knowledge? By the Threatner? look on mee,
 Mee who have touch'd and tasted, yet both live,
 And life more perfect have attain'd then Fate
 Meant mee, by ventring higher then my Lot.
 Shall that be shut to Man, which to the Beast
 Is open? or will God incense his ire
 For such a petty Trespasse, and not praise
 Rather your dauntless vertue, whom the pain
 Of Death denounc't, whatever thing Death be,
 Deter'd not from achieving what might leade
 To happier life, knowledge of Good and Evil;
 Of good, how just? of evil, if what is evil
 Be real, why not known, since easier shunn'd?
 God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just;
 Not just, not God; not feard then, nor obeyd:

Your

BOOK IX. *Paradise Lost.* 233

Your feare it self of Death removes the feare.
Why then was this forbid ? Why but to awe,
Why but to keep ye low and ignorant,
His worshippers ; he knows that in the day
Ye Eate thereof, your Eyes that seem so cleere,
Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then
Opn'd and cleerd, and ye shall be as Gods,
Knowing both Good and Evil as they know.
That ye should be as Gods, since I as Man,
Internal Man, is but proportion meet,
I of brute human, yee of human Gods,
So ye shall die perhaps, by putting off
Human, to put on Gods, death to be wisht,
Though threat'nd, which no worse then this can bring.
And what are Gods that Man may not become
As they, participating God-like food ?
The Gods are first, and that advantage use
On our belief, that all from them proceeds ;
I question it, for this fair Earth I see,
Warm'd by the Sun, producing every kind,
Them nothing : If they all things, who enclos'd
Knowledge of Good and Evil in this Tree,
That whoso eats thereof, forthwith attains
Wisdom without their leave ? and wherein lies
Th' offence, that Man should thus attain to know ?
What can your knowledge hurt him, or this Tree
Impart against his will if all be his ?
Or is it envie, and can envie dwell
In heav'nly breasts ? these, these and many more
Causes import your need of this fair Fruit.
Goddes humane, reach then, and freely taste.

He ended, and his words replete with guile
Into her heart too easie entrance won :
Fixt on the Fruit she gaz'd, which to behold

Might

234 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK IX.

Might tempt alone, and in her ears the sound
 Yet rung of his perswasive words, impregn'd
 With Reason, to her seeming, and with Truth ;
 Mean while the hour of Noon drew on, and wak'd
 An eager appetite, rais'd by the smell
 So favourie of that Fruit, which with desire,
 Inclinaire now grown to touch or taste,
 Solicited her longing eye ; yet first
 Pausing a while, thus to her self she mus'd.

Great are thy Vertues, doubtless, best of Fruits,
 Though kept from Man, and worthy to be admir'd,
 Whose taste, too long forborn, at first assay
 Gave elocution to the mute, and taught
 The Tongue not made for Speech to speak thy praise:
 Thy praise hee also who forbids thy use,
 Conceales not from us, naming thee the Tree
 Of Knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil ;
 Forbids us then to taste, but his forbidding
 Commends thee more, while it inferrs the good
 By thee communicated, and our want :
 For good unknown, sure is not had, or had
 And yet unknown, is as not had at all.
 In plain then, what forbids he but to know,
 Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise ?
 Such prohibitions binde not. But if Death
 Bind us with after-bands, what profits then
 Our inward freedom ? In the day we eate
 Of this fair Fruit, our doom is, we shall die.
 How dies the Serpent ? hee hath ear'n and lives,
 And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns,
 Irrational till then. For us alone
 Was death invented ? or to us deny'd
 This intellectuall food, for beasts reserv'd ?
 For Beasts it seems ; yet that one Beast which first
 Hath

Hath tasted, envies not, but brings with joy
The good befall'n him, Author unsuspect,
Friendly to man, farr from deceit or guile.
What fear I then, rather what know to feare
Under this ignorance of good and evil,
Of God or Death, of Law or Penaltie?
Here grows the Cure of all, this Fruit Divine,
Fair to the Eye, inviting to the Taste,
Of vertue to make wise: what hinders then
To reach, and feed at once both Bodie and Mind?

So saying, her rash hand in evil hour
Forth reaching to the Fruit, she pluck'd, she ate:
Earth felt the wound, and Nature from her seat
Sighing through all her Works gave signs of woe,
That all was lost. Back to the Thicket slunk
The guiltie Serpent, and well might, for *Eve*
Intent now wholly on her taste, naught else
Regarded, such delight till then, as seemd,
In Fruit she never tasted, whether true
Or fancies'd so, through expectation high
Of knowledg, nor was God-head from her thought.
Greedily she ingorg'd without restraint,
And knew not eating Death: Satiat at length,
And hight'nd as with Wine, jocond and boon,
Thus to her self she pleasingly began.

O Sovran, vertuous, precious of all Trees
In Paradise, of operation blest
To Sapience, hitherto obscur'd, infam'd,
And thy fair Fruit let hang, as to no end
Created; but henceforth my early care,
Not without Song, each Morning, and due praise
Shall tend thee, and the fertil burden ease
Of thy full branches offer'd free to all;
Till dieted by thee I grow mature

136 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK IX.

In knowledge, as the Gods who all things know;
 Though others envie what they cannot give;
 For had the gift bin theirs, it had not here
 Thus grown. Experience, next to thee I owe,
 Best guide; not following thee, I had remaind
 In ignorance, thou op'nst Wisdoms way,
 And giv'st access, though secret she retire.
 And I perhaps am secret; Heav'n is high,
 High and remote to see from thence distinct
 Each thing on Earth; and other care perhaps
 May have diverted from continual watch
 Our great Forbidder, safe with all his Spies
 About him. But to *Adam* in what sort
 Shall I appear? shall I to him make known
 As yet my change, and give him to partake
 Full happiness with mee, or rather not,
 But keep the odds of Knowledge in my power
 Without Copartner? so to add what wants
 In Femal Sex, the more to draw his Love,
 And render me more equal, and perhaps,
 A thing not undesirable, sometime
 Superior; for inferior who is free?
 This may be well: but what if God have seen,
 And Death ensue? then I shall be no more,
 And *Adam* wedded to another *Eve*,
 Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct;
 A death to think. Confirm'd then I resolve,
Adam shall share with me in blis or woe:
 So dear I love him, that with him all deaths
 I could endure, without him live no life.

So saying, from the Tree her step she turn'd,
 But first low Reverence don, as to the power
 That dwelt within, whose presence had infus'd
 Into the plant sciential sap, deriv'd

From

IX. Book IX. Paradise Lost. 237

From Nectar, drink of Gods. *Adam* the while
Waiting desirous her return, had wove
Of choicest Flours a Garland to adorne
Her Tresses, and her rural labours crown,
As Reapers oft are wont thir Harvest Queen.
Great joy he promis'd to his thoughts, and new
Solace in her return, so long delay'd;
Yet oft his heart, divine of something ill,
Misgave him; hee the faultring measure felt;
And forth to meet her went, the way she took
That Morn when first they parted; by the Tree
Of Knowledge he must pass, there he her met,
Scarfe from the Tree returning; in her hand
A bough of fairest fruit that downie smil'd,
New gatherd, and ambrosial smell diffus'd.
To him she hasted, in her face excuse
Came Prologue, and Apologie to prompt,
Which with bland words at will she thus address'd.

Hast thou not wondred, *Adam*, at my stay?
Thee I have mist, and thought it long, depriv'd
Thy presence, agonie of love till now
Not felt, nor shall be twice, for never more
Mean I to trie, what rash untri'd I sought,
The pain of absence from thy sight. But stranger
Hath bin the cause, and wonderful to hear:
This Tree is not as we are told, a Tree
Of danger tasted, nor to evil unknown
Op'ning the way, but of Divine effect
To open eyes, and make them Gods who taste;
And hath bin tasted such: the Serpent wise,
Or not restrain'd as wee, or not obeying,
Hath eat'n of the fruit, and is become,
Not dead, as we are threatn'd, but thenceforth
Endu'd with human voice and human sense,

Reasoning

238 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK IX.

Reasoning to admiration, and with mee
 Persuasively hath so prevaild, that I
 Have also tasted, and have also found
 Th' effects to correspond, opener mine Eyes,
 Dimm erst, dilated Spirits, ampler Heart,
 And growing up to Godhead ; which for thee
 Chiefly I fought, without thee can despise.
 For blifs, as thou hast part, to me is blifs,
 Tedious, unshar'd with thee, and odious soon.
 Thou therefore also taste, that equal Lot
 May joyne us, equal Joy, as equal Love ;
 Least thou not tasting, different degree
 Disjoyne us, and I then too late renounce
 Deitie for thee, when Fate will not permit.

Thus *Eve* with Countenance blithe her storie told ;
 But in her Cheek distemper flushing glowd.
 On th' other side, *Adam*, soon as he heard
 The fatal Trespasse don by *Eve*, amaz'd,
 Astonied stood and Blank, while horror chill
 Ran through his veins, and all his joynts relax'd ;
 From his slack hand the Garland wreath'd for *Eve*
 Down drop'd, and all the faded Roses shed :
 Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length
 First to himself he inward silence broke.

O fairest of Creation, last and best
 Of all Gods works, Creature in whom excell'd
 Whatever can to sight or thought be formd,
 Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet !
 How art thou lost, how on a sudden lost,
 Defac't, deflourd, and now to Death devote ?
 Rather how hast thou yeelded to transgress
 The strict forbiddance, how to violate
 The sacred Fruit forbidd'n ! som cursed fraud
 Of Enemie hath beguil'd thee, yet unknown,

And

And mee with thee hath ruind, for with thee
 Certain my resolution is to Die ;
 How can I live without thee, how forgoe
 Thy sweet Converse and Love so dearly joyn'd,
 To live again in these wilde Woods forlorn ?
 Should God create another *Eve*, and I
 Another Rib afford, yet loss of thee
 Would never from my heart ; no no, I feel
 The Link of Nature draw me : Flesh of Flesh,
 Bone of my Bone, thou art, and from thy State
 Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe.

So having said, as one from sad dismay
 Recomforted, and after thoughts disturb'd
 Submitting to what seem'd remediless,
 Thus in calm mood his Words to *Eve* he turn'd.

Bold deed thou hast presum'd, adventrous *Eve*,
 And peril great provok't, who thus hath dar'd
 Had it been onely coveting to Eye
 That sacred Fruit, sacred to abstinence,
 Much more to taste it under banne to touch.
 But past who can recall, or don undoe ?
 Not God Omnipotent, nor Fate, yet so
 Perhaps thou shalt not Die, perhaps the Fact
 Is not so hainous now, foretasted Fruit,
 Profan'd first by the Serpent, by him first
 Made common and unhallowd ere our taste ;
 Nor yet on him found deadly, he yet lives,
 Lives, as thou saidst, and gaines to live as Man
 Higher degree of Life, inducement strong
 To us, as likely tasting to attaine
 Proportional ascent, which cannot be
 But to be Gods, or Angels Demi-gods.
 Nor can I think that God, Creator wise,
 Though threatening, will in earnest so destroy

Us his prime Creatures, dignifi'd so high,
 Set over all his Works, which in our Fall,
 For us created, needs with us must faile,
 Dependent made: so God shall uncreate,
 Be frustrate, do, undo, and labour loose,
 Not well conceav'd of God, who though his Power
 Creation could repeate, yet would be loath
 Us to abolish, least the Adversary
 Triumph and say; Fickle their State whom God
 Most Favors, who can please him long? Mee first
 He ruind, now Mankind; whom will he next?
 Matter of scorne, not to be given the Foe,
 However I with thee have fixt my Lot,
 Certain to undergoe like doom, if Death
 Confort with thee, Death is to mee as Life:
 So forcible within my heart I feel
 The Bond of Nature draw me to my owne,
 My own in thee, for what thou art is mine;
 Our State cannot be severd, we are one,
 One Flesh; to loose thee were to loose my self.

So *Adam*, and thus *Eve* to him replid.
 O glorious trial of exceeding Love,
 Illustrious evidence, example high!
 Ingaging me to emulate, but short
 Of thy perfection, how shall I attaine,
Adam, from whose deare side I boast me sprung,
 And gladly of our Union heare thee speak,
 One Heart, one Soul in both; whereof good proof
 This day affords, declaring thee resolv'd,
 Rather then Death or aught then Death more dread
 Shall separate us, linkt in Love so deare,
 To undergoe with mee one Guilt, one Crime,
 If any be, of tasting this fair Fruit,
 Whose vertue, for of good still good proceeds

Direct,

Direct, or by occasion hath presented
This happie trial of thy Love, which else
So eminently never had bin known.
Were it I thought Death menac'd would ensue
This my attempt, I would sustain alone
The worst, and not perswade thee; rather did
Deserted, then oblige thee with a fact
Pernicious to thy Peace, chiefly assur'd
Remarkably so late of thy so true,
So faithful Love unequald; but I feel
Farr otherwise th' event, not Death, but Life
Augmented, op'nd Eyes, new Hopes, new Joyes,
Taste so Divine, that what of sweet before
Hath toucht my sense, flat seems to this, and harsh.
On my experience, *Adam*, freely taste,
And fear of Death deliver to the *VV*indes.

So saying, she embrac'd him, and for joy
Tenderly wept, much won that he his Love
Had so enobl'd, as of choice to incurr
Divine displeasure for her sake, or Death.
In recompence (for such compliance had
Such recompence best merits) from the bough
She gave him of that fair enticing Fruit
With liberal hand: he scrupl'd not to eat
Against his better knowledge, not deceav'd,
But fondly overcome with Femal charm.
Earth trembl'd from her entrails, as again
In pangs, and Nature gave a second groan,
Skie lowr'd and muttering Thunder, som sad drops
Wept at compleating of the mortal Sin
Original; while *Adam* took no thought,
Eating his fill, nor *Eve* to iterate
Her former trespass fear'd, the more to soothe
Him with her lov'd societie, that now

As with new Wine intoxicated both
They swim in mirth, and fanſie that they feel
Divinitie within them breeding wings
Wherewith to ſcorne the Earth : but that falſe Fruit
Farr other operation firſt diſplaid,
Carnal deſire enflaming, hee on *Eve*
Began to caſt laſcivious Eyes, ſhe him
As wantonly repaid ; in Luſt they burne
Till *Adam* thus 'gan *Eve* to dalliance move.

Eve, now I ſee thou art exact of taſte,
And elegant, of Sapience no ſmall part,
Since to each meaning ſavour we apply,
And Palate call judicious ; I the praife
Yeild thee, ſo well this day thou haſt purvey'd.
Much pleaſure we have loſt, while we abſtain'd
From this delightful Fruit, nor known till now
True reliſh, taſting ; if ſuch pleaſure be
In things to us forbidden, it might be wiſh'd,
For this one Tree had bin forbidden ten.
But come, ſo well reſreſh't, now let us play,
As meet is, after ſuch delicious Fare ;
For never did thy Beautie ſince the day
I ſaw thee firſt and wedded thee, adorn'd
With all perfections, ſo enflame my ſenſe
With ardor to enjoy thee, fairer now
Then ever, bountie of this vertuous Tree.

So ſaid he, and forbore not glance or toy
Of amorous intent, well underſtood
Of *Eve*, whoſe Eye darted contagious Fire.
Her hand he ſeis'd, and to a ſhadie bank,
Thick overhead with verdant roof imbowl'd
He led her nothing loath ; Flours were the Couch,
Panſies, and Violets, and Aſphodel,
And Hyacinth, Earths freſheſt ſoſteſt lap.

There

There they thir fill of Love and Love's disport
 Took largely, of thir mutual guilt the Seale,
 The solace of thir sin, till dewie sleep
 Oppress'd them, wearied with thir amorous play.
 Soon as the force of that fallacious Fruit,
 That with exhilarating vapour bland
 About thir spirits had plaid, and inmost powers
 Made erre, was now exhal'd, and grosser sleep
 Bread of unkindly fumes, with conscious dreams
 Encumberd, now had left them, up they rose
 As from unrest, and each the other viewing,
 Soon found thir Eyes how op'nd, and thir minds
 How dark'nd; innocence, that as a veile
 Had shadow'd them from knowing ill, was gon,
 Just confidence, and native righteousness
 And honour from about them, naked left
 To guiltie shame hee cover'd, but his Robe
 Uncover'd more. So rose the *Danire* strong
Herculean Samson from the Harlot-lap
 Of *Philiscean Dalilah*, and wak'd
 Shorn of his strength, They destitute and bare
 Of all thir vertue: silent, and in face
 Confounded long they sate, struck'n mute,
 Till *Adam*, though not less then *Eve* abash't,
 At length gave utterance to these words constraind.

O *Eve*, in evil hour thou didst give care
 To that false Worm, of whomsoever taught
 To counterfet *Man's* voice, true in our Fall,
 False in our promis'd Rising; since our Eyes
 Op'nd we find indeed, and find we know
 Both Good and Evil, Good lost, and Evil got,
 Bad Fruit of Knowledge, if this be to know,
 Which leaves us naked thus, of Honour void,
 Of Innocence, of Faith, of Puritie,

244 *Paradise Lost*. Book IX.

Our wonted Ornaments now soild and staine,
 And in our Faces evident the signes
 Of soul concupiscence; whence evil store;
 Even shame, the last of evils; of the first
 Be sure then. How shall I behold the face
 Henceforth of God or Angel, earst with joy
 And rapture so oft beheld? those heav'nly shapes
 Will dazle now this earthly, with thir blaze
 Insufferably bright. O might I here
 In solitude live sayage, in some glade
 Obscur'd, where highest Woods impenetrable
 To Star or Sun-light spread thir umbrage broad
 And brown as Evening: Cover me ye Pines,
 Ye Cedars, with innumerable boughs
 Hide me, where I may never see them more.
 But let us now, as in bad plight, devise
 What best may from the present serve to hide
 The Parts of each from other, that seem most
 To shame obnoxious, and unseemliest seen,
 Some Tree whose broad smooth Leaves together sowl,
 And girded on our loyns, may cover round
 Those middle parts, that this new commer, Shame,
 There sit not, and reproach us as unclean.

So counsel'd hee, and both together went
 Into the thickest Wood, there soon they chose
 The Figtree, not that kind for Fruit renown'd,
 But such as at this day to *Indians* known
 In *Malabar* or *Decan* spreads her Armes
 Braunching so broad and long, that in the ground
 The bended Twigs take root, and Daughters grow
 About the Mother Tree, a Pillard shade
 High overarch't, and echoing Walks between;
 There oft the *Indian* Herdsman shunning heate
 Shelters in coole, and tends his pasturing Herds

BOOK IX. *Paradise Lost.* 245

At Loopholes cut through thickest shade: Those
They gatherd, broad as *Amazonian* Targe, (Leaves
And with what skill they had, together sowd,
To gird thir waste, vain Covering if to hide
Thir guilt and dreaded shame; O how unlike
To that first naked Glorie! Such offate
Columbus foundth' *American* to girt
With featherd Cincture, naked else and wilde
Among the Trees on Iles and woodie Shores.
Thus fenc't, and as they thought, thir shame in part
Coverd, but not at rest or ease of Mind,
They sate them down to weep, nor onely Teares
Raind at thir Eyes, but high Winds worke within
Began to rise, high Passions, Anger, Hate,
Mistrust, Suspicion, Discord, and shook sore
Thir inward State of Mind; calm Region once
And full of peace, now tost and turbulent:
For Understanding rul'd not, and the Will
Heard not her lore, both in subjection now
To sensual Appetite, who from beneath
Usurping over sovran Reason claimd
Superior sway: from thus distemperd brest,
Adam, estrang'd in look and alterd stile,
Speech intermitted thus to *Eve* renewd.

Would thou hadst heark'nd to my words, and staid
With me, as I besought thee when that strange
Desire of wandring this unhappie Morn,
I know not whence possessd thee: we had then
Remaind still happie, not as now, despoild
Of all our good, sham'd, naked, miserable,
Let none henceforth seek needles cause to approve
The Faith they owe; when earnestly they seek
Such proof, conclude, they then begin to faile.
To whom soon mov'd with touch of blame thus *Eve*.

What words have pass't thy Lips, *Adam* severe,
 Imput'st thou that to my default, or will
 Of wandring, as thou call'st it, which who knows
 But might as ill have happend thou being by,
 Or to thy self perhaps : hadst thou bin there,
 Or here th' attempt, thou couldst not have discern'd
 Fraud in the Serpent, speaking as he spake ;
 No ground of enmitie between us known,
 Why he should mean me ill, or seek to harme.
 Was I to have never parted from thy side ?
 As good have grown there still a liveless Rib.
 Being as I am, why didst not thou the Head
 Command me absolutely not to go,
 Going into such danger as thou saidst ?
 Too facil then thou didst not much gainsay,
 Nay didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.
 Hadst thou bin firm and fixt in thy dissent,
 Neither had I transgress'd, nor thou with mee.

To whom then first incens'd *Adam* repli'd,
 Is this the Love, is this the recompence
 Of mine to thee, ingrateful *Eve*, exprest
 Immutable when thou wert lost, not I,
 Who might have liv'd and joyd immortal blis,
 Yet willingly chose rather Death with thee :
 And am I now upbraided, as the cause
 Of thy transgressing ? not enough severe,
 It seems, in thy restraint : what could I more ?
 I warn'd thee, I admonish'd thee, foretold
 The danger, and the lurking Enemie
 That lay in wait ; beyond this had bin force,
 And force upon free will hath here no place.
 But confidence then bore thee on, secure
 Either to meet no danger, or to finde
 Matter of glorious trial ; and perhaps

I also err'd in overmuch admiring
What seem'd in thee so perfect, that I thought
No evil durst attempt thee ; but I rue
That error now, which is become my crime,
And thou th' accuser. Thus it shall befall
Him who to worth in Women overtrusting
Lets her will rule : restraint she will not brook,
And left to her self, if evil thence ensue,
Shee first his weak indulgence will accuse.

Thus they in mutual accusation spent
The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning,
And of thir vain contest appear'd no end.

The End of the Ninth Book.

And of this / unaccountable power and end
The first is this / that he will condemn
I thus say in my heart / to whom I goe
Shew that his work is done / and will be done
And tell to her that / if she will come
Her heart will melt / and she will not be cold
His work is done / in my heart / and will be done
And he will be done / in my heart / and will be done
And he will be done / in my heart / and will be done

The End of the Ninth Book

Printed by J. Streater

Paradise Lost.

BOOK X.

THE ARGUMENT.

Man's transgression known, the Guardian Angels forsake Paradise, and return up to Heaven to approve their vigilance, and are approv'd, God declaring that the entrance of Satan could not be by them prevented: He sends his Son to judge the Transgressors, who descends and gives Sentence accordingly; then in pity cloaths them both, and reascends. Sin and Death sitting till then at the Gates of Hell, by wondrous sympathetic feeling the success of Satan in this new world, and the sin by Man there committed, resolve to sit no longer confin'd in Hell, but to follow Satan their Sire up to the place of Man: To make the way easier from Hell to this world to and fro, they pave a broad Highway or Bridge over Chaos, according to the Track that Satan first made; then preparing for Earth, they meet him proud of his success returning to Hell; their mutual gratulation. Satan arrives at Pandemonium, in full assembly relates with boasting his success

Success against Man; instead of applause is entertained with a general hiss by all his audience, transformed with himself also suddenly into Serpent, according to his doom given in Paradise; then deludes with a shew of the forbidden Tree springing up before them, they greedily reaching to take of the Fruit, chew dust and bitter ashes. The proceedings of Sin and Death; God foretels the final Victory of his Son over them, and the renewing of all things; but for the present commands his Angels to make several alterations in the Heavens and Elements. Adam more and more perceiving his fall in condition heavily bewails, rejects the condolment of Eve; she persists and at length appeases him: then to evade the Curse likely to fall on their Offspring, proposes to Adam violent ways which he approves not, but conceiving better hope, puts her in mind of the Late Promise made them, that her Seed should be reveng'd on the Serpent, and exhorts her with him to seek Peace of the offended Deity, by repentance and supplication.

Meanwhile the hainous and despightfull act Of Satan done in Paradise, and how Hee in the Serpent, had perverted Eve, Her Husband Hee, to taste the fatall fruit, Was known in Heav'n; for what can scape the Eye Of God All-seeing, or deceive his Heart Omniscient, who in all things wise and just, Hinder'd not Satan to attempt the minde Of Man, with strength entire, and free will arm'd, Complete to have discover'd and repulst Whatever wiles of Foe or seeming Friend. For still they knew, and ought to have still remembred The high Injunction not to taste that Fruit,

Who

Whoever tempted; which they not obeying,
 Incurr'd, what could they less, the penal tie,
 And manifold in sin, deserv'd to fall.
 Up into Heav'n from Paradise in haste
 Th' Angelic Guards ascended, mute and sad
 For Man, for of his state by this they knew,
 Much wondring how the suttie Fiend had stoln
 Entrance unseen. Soon as th' unwelcome news
 From Earth arriv'd at Heaven Gate, displeas'd
 All were who heard, dim sadness did not spare
 That time Celestial visages, yet mixt
 With pitie, violated not thir bliss.
 About the new-arriv'd, in multitudes
 Th' Ethereal People ran, to hear and know
 How all befell: they towards the Throne Supreme
 Accountable made haste to make appear
 With righteous plea, thir utmost vigilance,
 And easily approv'd; when the most High
 Eternal Father from his secret Cloud,
 Amidst in Thunder utter'd thus his voice.

Assembl'd Angels, and ye Powers return'd
 From unsuccessful charge, be not dismay'd,
 Nor troubl'd at these tidings from the Earth;
 Which your sincerest care could not prevent,
 Foretold so lately what would come to pass,
 When first this Tempter cross'd the Gulf from Hell.
 I told ye then he should prevail and speed
 On his bad Errand; Man should be seduc't
 And flatter'd out of all, believing lies
 Against his Maker; no Decree of mine
 Concurring to necessitate his Fall,
 Or touch with lightest moment of impulse
 His free will, to her own inclining left
 In eevn scale. But fall'n he is, and now

What

252 **Paradise Lost. Book X.**

What rests but that the mortal Sentence pass
 On his transgression, Death denounc't that day,
Which he presumes already vain and void,
 Because not yet inflicted, as he fear'd,
 By some immediate stroke; but soon shall find
 Forbearance no acquittance ere day end;
 Justice shall not return as bountie scorn'd.
 But whom send I to judge them? whom but thee
 Vicegerent Son, to thee I have transferr'd
 All Judgement whether in Heav'n, or Earth, or Hell,
 Easie it might be seen that I intend
 Mercie colleague with Justice sending thee
 Mans Friend, his Mediator, his design'd
 Both Ransom and Redeemer voluntarie,
 And destin'd Man himself to Judge Man fall'n.

So spake the Father, and unfolding bright
 Toward the right hand his Glorie, on the Son
 Blaz'd forth unclouded Delitie; he full
 Resplendent all his Father manifest
 Express'd, and thus divinely answer'd milde.

Father Eternal, thine is to decree,
 Mine both in Heav'n and Earth to do thy will
 Supream, that thou in mee thy Son belov'd
 Mayst ever rest well pleas'd. I go to judge
 On Earth these thy transgressors, but thou knowst,
Whoever judg'd, the worst on mee must light,
When time shall be, for so I undertook
 Before thee; and not repenting, this obtaine
 Of right, that I may mitigate thir doom
 On me deriv'd; yet I shall temper so
 Justice with Mercie, as may illustrate most
 Them fully satisfied, and thee appease.
 Attendance none shall need, nor Train, where none
 Are to behold the Judgment, but the judg'd,

Those

BOOK X. Paradise Lost. 233

Those two ; the third best absent is condemn'd,
Convict by flight, and Rebel to all Law
Conviction to the Serpent none belongs.

Thus saying, from his radiant Seat he rose
Of high collateral glorie : him Thrones and Powers,
Princedomes, and Dominations ministrant
Accompanied to Heaven Gate, from whence
Eden and all the Coast in prospect lay,
Down he descended strait ; the speed of Gods
Time counts not, though with swiftest minutes wing'd.
Now was the Sun in VVestern cadence low
From Noon, and gentle Aires due at thir hour
To fan the Earth now wak'd, and usher in
The Eevning coole when he from wrauth more coole
Came the mild Judge and Intercessor both
To sentence Man : the voice of God they heard
Now walking in the Garden, by soft winds
Brought to thir Ears, while day declin'd, they heard,
And from his presence hid themselves among
The thickest Trees, both Man and VVife, till God
Approaching, thus to *Adam* call'd aloud.

VVhere art thou *Adam*, wont with joy to meet
My coming seen far off ? I miss thee here,
Not pleas'd, thus entertain'd with solitude,
VVhere obvious dutie erewhile appear'd unsought :
Or come I less conspicuous, or what change
Absents thee, or what chance detains ? Come forth.
He came, and with him *Eve*, more loth, though first
To offend, discount'nanc'd both, and discompos'd ;
Love was not in thir looks, either to God
Or to each other, but apparent guilt,
And shame, and perturbation, and despaire,
Anger, and obstinacie, and hate, and guile.
Whence *Adam* faultring long, thus answer'd brief.
I heard thee in the Garden, and of thy voice

AF.

Affraid, being naked, hid my self. To whom
The gracious Judge without revile repli'd.

My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not fear'd,
But still rejoyc't, how is it now become
So dreadful to thee? that thou art naked, who
Hath told thee? hast thou eaten of the Tree
Whereof I gave thee charge thou shouldst not eat?

To whom thus *Adam* sore beset repli'd.

O Heav'n! in evil strait this day I stand
Before my Judge, either to undergo
My self the total Crime, or to accuse
My other self, the partner of my life;
Whose failing, while her Faith to me remains,
I should conceal, and not expose to blame
By my complaint? but strict necessitie
Subdues me, and calamitous constraint
Least on my head both sin and punishment,
However insupportable, be all
Devolv'd; though should I hold my peace, yet thou
Wouldst easily detect what I conceal.

This Woman whom thou mad'st to be my help,
And gav'st me as thy perfect gift, so good,
So fit, so acceptable, so Divine,
That from her hand I could suspect no ill,
And what she did, whatever in it self,
Her doing seem'd to justify the deed;
Shee gave me of the Tree, and I did eate.

To whom the Sovran Presence thus repli'd.
Was shee thy God, that her thou didst obey
Before his voice, or was shee made thy guide,
Superior, or but equal, that to her
Thou did'st resigne thy Manhood, and the Place
Wherein God set thee above her made of thee,
And for thee, whose perfection farr excell'd

Hers

Hers in all real dignitie: Adorn'd
 She was indeed, and lovely to attract
 Thy Love, not thy Subjection, and her Gifts
 Were such as under Government well seem'd,
 Unseemly to bear rule, which was thy part
 And person, hadst thou known thy self aright.

So having said, he thus to *Eve* in few:
 Say Woman, what is this which thou hast done?

To whom sad *Eve* with shame high overwhelm'd,
 Confessing soon, yet not before her Judge
 Bold or loquacious, thus abasht repli'd.

The Serpent me beguil'd and I did eate.

Which when the Lord God heard, without delay
 To Judgement he proceeded on th' accus'd

Serpent though brute, unable to transerre

The Guilt on him who made him instrument

Of mischief, and polluted from the end

Of his Creation; justly then accurst,

As vitiated in Nature: more to know

Concern'd not Man (since he no further knew)

Nor alter'd his offence; yet God at last

To Satan first in sin his doom apply'd,

Though in mysterious terms, judg'd as then best:

And on the Serpent thus his curse let fall.

Because thou hast done this, thou art accurst

Above all Cattle, each Beast of the Field;

Upon thy Belly groveling thou shalt goe,

And dust shalt eat all the dayes of thy Life.

Between Thee and the Woman I will put

Enmitie, and between thine and her Seed;

Her Seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel.

So spake this Oracle, then verifi'd

When *Iesus* son of *Mary* second *Eve*,

Saw Satan fall like Lightning, down from Heav'n,

Prince

Prince of the Aire; then rising from his Grave:
 Spoild Principalities and Powers, triumph
 In open shew, and with ascention bright:
 Captivity led captive through the Aire,
 The Realm it self of Satan long usurpt,
 Whom he shall tread at last under our feet;
 Eevn hee who now foretold his fatal bruise,
 And to the Woman thus his Sentence turn'd.

Thy sorrow I will greatly multiply
 By thy Conception; Children thou shalt bring
 In sorrow forth, and to thy Husbands will
 Thine shalt submit, he over thee shall rule.

On *Adam* last thus judgment he pronounc'd.
 Because thou hast heark'nd to the voice of thy Wife,
 And eaten of the Tree concerning which
 I charg'd thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat thereof:
 Curs'd is the ground for thy sake, thou in sorrow
 Shalt eat thereof all the days of thy Life;
 Thorns also and Thistles it shall bring thee forth
 Unbid, and thou shalt eat th' Herb of th' Field,
 In the sweat of thy Face shalt thou eat Bread,
 Till thou return unto the ground, for thou
 Out of the ground wast taken, know thy Birth,
 For dust thou art, and shalt to dust return.

So judg'd he Man, both Judge and Saviour sent,
 And th' instant stroke of Death denounc't that day
 Remov'd farr off; then pittying how they stood
 Before him naked to the aire, that now
 Must suffer change, disdain'd not to begin
 Thenceforth the form of servant to assume,
 As when he washt his servants feet, so now
 As Father of his Family he clad
 Thir nakedness with Skins of Beasts, or slain,
 Or as the Snake with youthful Coat repaid;

And

And thought not much to cloath his Enemies:
 Nor he thir outward onely with the Skins
 Of Beasts, but inward nakedness, much more
 Opprobrious, with his Robe of righteousness,
 Araying cover'd from his Fathers sight.
 To him with swift ascent he up return'd,
 Into his blisful bosom reassum'd
 In glory as of old, to him appear'd
 All, though all-knowing, what had past with Man
 Recounted, mixing intercession sweet.
 Meanwhile ere thus was sin'd and judg'd on Earth,
 Within the Gates of Hell sat Sin and Death,
 In counterview within the Gates, that now
 Stood open wide, belching outrageous flame
 Farr into *Chaos*, since the Fiend past through,
 Sin opening, who thus now to Death began.

O Son, why sit we here each other viewing
 Idly, while Satan our great Author thrives
 In other Worlds, and happier Seat provides
 For us his Ofspring dear? It cannot be
 But that success attends him; if mishap,
 Ere this he had return'd, with fury driv'n
 By his Avengers, since no place like this
 Can fit his punishment, or their revenge.
 Methinks I feel new strength within me rise,
 Wings growing, and Dominion giv'n me large
 Beyond this Deep; whatever draws me on,
 Or sympathy, or som connatural force
 Powerful at greatest distance to unite
 With secret amity things of like kind
 By secretest conveyance. Thou my Shade
 Inseparable must with me along:
 For Death from Sin no power can separate.
 But least the difficulty of passing back

Stay his return perhaps over this Gulfe
 Impassable, Impervious, let us try
 Adventrous work, yet to thy power and mine
 Not unagrecable, to found a path
 Over this Maine from Hell to that new World
 Where Satan now prevails, a Monument
 Of merit high to all th' infernal Host,
 Easing thir Passage hence, for intercourse,
 Or transmigration, as thir lot shall lead.
 Nor can I miss the way, so strongly drawn
 By this new felt attraction and instinct.

Whom thus the meager Shadow answerd soon.
 Goe whither Fate and inclination strong
 Leads thee, I shall not lag behinde, nor erre
 The way, thou leading, such a sent I draw
 Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste
 The savour of Death from all things there that live:
 Nor shall I to the work thou enterprisest
 Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid.

So saying, with delight he snuff'd the smell
 Of mortal change on Earth. As when a flock
 Of ravenous Fowl, though many a League remote,
 Against the day of Battel, to a Field,
 Where Armies lie encampt, come flying, lur'd
 With sent of living Carcasses design'd
 For death, the following day, in bloodie fight.
 So sented the grim Feature, and upturn'd
 His Nostril wide into the murkie Air,
 Sagacious of his Quarry from so farr.
 Then Both from out Hell Gates into the waste
 Wide Anarchie of *Chaos* damp and dark
 Flew divers, and with Power (thir power was great)
 Hovering upon the Waters; what they they met
 Spild or slimic, as in raging Sea

Tost up and down, together crowded drove
 From each side shoaling towards the mouth of Hell.
 As when two polar Winds blowing adverse
 Upon the *Cronian* Sea, together drive
 Mountains of Ice, that stop th' imagin'd way
 Beyond *Petora* Eastward, to the rich
Cathian Coast. The aggregated Soyle
 Death with his Mace petrific, cold and dry,
 As with a Trident smote, and fix't as firm
 As *Delos* floating once; the rest his look
 Bound with *Gorgonian* rigor not to move,
 And with *Asphaltic* slime; broad as the Gate,
 Deep to the Roots of Hell the gather'd beach
 They fasten'd, and the Mole immense wrought on
 Over the foaming deep high Arch, a Bridge
 Of length prodigious joyning to the Wall
 Immovable of this now fenceless world
 Forfeit to Death; from hence a passage broad,
 Smooth, easie, inoffensive down to Hell.
 So, if great things to small may be compar'd,
Xerxes, the Libertie of *Greece* to yoke,
 From *Susa* his *Memnonian* Palace high
 Came to the Sea, and over *Hellepont*
 Bridging his way, *Europe* with *Asia* joyn'd,
 And scourg'd with many a stroke th' indignant waves.
 Now had they brought the work by wondrous Art
 Pontifical, a ridge of pendent Rock
 Over the vex'd Abyss, following the track
 Of *Satan*, to the self same place where hee
 First lighted from his Wing, and lended safe
 From out of *Chaos* to the outside bare
 Of this round World: with Pins of Adamant
 And Chains they made all fast, too fast they made
 And durable; and now in little space

The confines met of Empyrean Heav'n
 And of this World, and on the left hand Hell
 With long reach interpos'd; three sev'ral wayes
 In sight, to each of these three places led.
 And now thir way to Earth they had descri'd,
 To Paradise first tending, when behold
Satan in likeness of an Angel bright
 Betwixt the *Centaur* and the *Scorpion* steering
 His *Zenith*, while the Sun in *Aries* rose:
 Disguis'd he came, but those his Children dear
 Thir Parent soon discern'd, though in disguise.
 Hee after *Eve* seduc't, unminded slunk
 Into the Wood fast by, and changing shape
 To observe the sequel, saw his guileful act
 By *Eve*, though all unweeting, seconded
 Upon her Husband, saw thir shame that sought
 Vain covertures; but when he saw descend
 The Son of God to judge them terrifi'd
 Hee fled, not hoping to escape, but shun
 The present, fearing guiltie what his wrath
 Might suddenly inflict; that past, return'd
 By Night, and listening where the hapless Paire
 Sate in thir sad discourse, and various plaint,
 Thence gatherd his own doom, which understood
 Not instant, but of future time. With joy
 And tidings fraught, to Hell he now return'd,
 And at the brink of *Chaos*, neer the foot
 Of this new wondrous Pontifice, unhop't
 Met who to meet him came, his Ofspring dear.
 Great joy was at thir meeting, and at sight
 Of that stupendious Bridge his joy increas'd.
 Long hee admiring stood, till Sin, his faire
 Inchanting Daughter, thus the silence broke.
 O Parent, these are thy magnific deeds,

Thy

BOOK X. *Paradise Lost.* 261

Thy Trophies, which thou view'st as not thine own.
 Thou art thir Author and prime Architect:
 For I no sooner in my Heart divin'd,
 My Heart, which by a secret harmonic
 Still moves with thine, join'd in connexion sweet,
 That thou on Earth hadst prosper'd, which thy looks
 Now also evidence, but straight I felt
 Though distant from thee Worlds between, yet felt
 That I must after thee with this thy Son;
 Such fatal consequence unites us three:
 Hell could no longer hold us in her bounds,
 Nor this unvoyageable Gulf obscure
 Detain from following thy illustrious track.
 Thou hast achiev'd our libertie, confin'd
 Within Hell Gates till now, thou us impow'r'd
 To fortifie thus farr, and overlay
 With this portentous Bridge the dark Abyss.
 Thine now is all this World, thy vertue hath won
 What thy hands builded not, thy Wisdom gain'd
 With odds what warr hath lost, and fully aveng'd
 Our sojourn in Heav'n; here thou shalt Monarch reign,
 There didst not; there let him still Victor sway,
 As Battel hath adjudg'd, from this new World
 Retiring, by his own doom alienated,
 And henceforth Monarchie with thee divide
 Of all things parted by th' Empyrean bounds,
 His Quadrature, from thy Orbicular World,
 Or trie thee now more dangerous to his Throne.

Whom thus the Prince of Darkness answerd glad.
 Fair Daughter, and thou Son and Grandchild both,
 High proof ye now have giv'n to be the Race
 Of *Satan* (for I glorie in the name,
 Antagonist of Heav'n's Almighty King)

Amplly have merited of me, of all
 Th' infernal Empire, that so near Heav'n's dore
 Triumphal with triumphal act have met,
 Mine with this glorious Work, and made one Realm
 Hell and this World, one Realm, one Continent
 Of easie thorough-fare. Therefore while I
 Descend through Darknes, on your Rode with ease
 To my associate Powers, them to acquaint
 With these successes, and with them rejoyce,
 You two this way, among these numerous Orbs
 All yours, right down to Paradise descend ;
 There dwell and Reign in blis, thence on the Earth
 Dominion exercise and in the Aire,
 Chiefly on Man, sole Lord of all declar'd,
 Him first make sure your thrall, and lastly kill.
 My Substitutes I send ye, and Create
 Plenipotent on Earth, of matchless might
 Issuing from me : on your joynt vigor now
 My hold of this new Kingdom all depends,
 Through Sin to Death expos'd by my exploit.
 If your joynt power prevails, th' affairs of Hell
 No detriment need fear, go and be strong.

So saying he dismiss them, they with speed
 Thir course through thickest Constellations held
 Spreading thir bane ; the blasted Starrs lookt wan,
 And Planets, Planet-struck, real Eclips
 Then suffer'd. Th' other way *Satan* went down
 The Causey to Hell Gate ; on either side
 Disparted *Chaos* over built exclaim'd,
 And with rebounding furge the barrs assaild,
 That scorn'd his indignation : through the Gate,
 Wide open and unguarded, *Satan* pass'd,
 And all about found desolate ; for those
 Appointed to sit there, had left thir charge,

Flown

Flown to the upper World; the rest were all
 Farr to the inland retir'd, about the walls
 Of *Pandemonium*, Citie and proud seate
 Of *Lucifer*, so by allusion call'd,
 Of that bright Starr to *Satan* paragon'd,
 There kept thir Watch the Legions, while the Grand
 In Council sate, sollicitous what chance
 Might intercept thir Emperour, sent, so hee
 Departing gave command, and they observ'd.
 As when the *Tartar* from his *Russian* Foe
 By *Astracan* over the Snowie Plaines
 Retires, or *Bactrian* *Sophie* from the hornes
 Of *Turkish* Crescent, leaves all waste beyond
 The Realm of *Aladule*, in his retreat
 To *Tauris* or *Casbeen*. So these the late
 Heav'n-banish'd Host, left desert utmost Hell
 Many a dark League, reduc't in careful Watch
 Round thir Metropolis, and now expecting
 Each hour thir great adventurer from the search
 Of Forrein Worlds: he through the midst unmarkt,
 In shew *Plebeian* Angel militant
 Of lowest order, past, and from the dore
 Of that *Plutonian* Hall, invisible
 Ascended his high Throne, which under state
 Of richest texture spred, at th' upper end
 Was plac't in regal lustre. Down a while
 He sate and round about him saw unseen:
 At last as from a Cloud his fulgent head
 And shape Starr bright appear'd, or brighter, clad
 With what permissive glorie since his fall
 Was left him, or false glitter: All amaz'd
 At that so sudden blaze the *Sygyan* throng
 Bent thir aspect, and whom they wish'd beheld,
 Thir mighty Chief return'd: loud was th' acclaime:

264 *Paradise Lost.* Book X.

Forth rush'd in haste the great consulting Peers,
Rais'd from thir Dark *Divan*, and with like joy
Congratulant approach'd him, who with hand
Silence, and with these words attention won.

Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Vertues, Pow-
For in possession such, not onely of right, (ers,
I call ye and declare ye now, return'd
Successful beyond hope, to lead ye forth
Triumphant out of this infernal Pit
Abominable, accurst, the house of woe,
And dungeon of our Tyrant : Now possess,
As Lords, a spacious VWorld to our native Heaven
Little inferiour, by my adventure hard
With peril great achiev'd. Long were to tell
What I have don, what sufferd, with what paine
Voyag'd th' unreal, vast, unbounded deep
Of horrible confusion, over which
By Sin and Death a broad way now is pav'd
To expedite your glorious march ; but I
Toild out my uncouth passage, forc't to ride
Th' untractable Abyss, plung'd in the womb
Of unoriginal *Night* and *Chaos* wilde,
That jealous of thir secrets fiercely oppos'd
My journey strange, with clamorous uproare
Protesting Fate supream ; thence how I found
The new created VWorld, which fame in Heav'n
Long had foretold, a Fabrick wonderful
Of absolute perfection, therein Man
Plac't in a Paradise, by our exile
Made happie : Him by fraud I have seduc'd
From his Creator, and the more to increase
Your wonder, with an Apple ; he therat
Offended, worth your laughter, hath giv'n up
Both his beloved Man and all his VWorld,

BOOK X. Paradise Lost. 265

To Sin and Death a prey, and so to us,
VVithout our hazard, labour, or allarme,
To range in, and to dwell, and over Man
To rule, as over all he should have rul'd.
True is, mee also he hath judg'd, or rather
Mee not, but the brute Serpent in whose shape
Man I deceav'd: that which to mee belongs,
Is enmity, which he will put between
Mee and Mankinde; I am to bruise his heel;
His Seed, when is not set, shall bruise my head:
A VVorld who would not purchase with a bruise,
Or much more grievous paine? Ye have th' account
Of my performance: VVhat remains, ye Gods,
But up and enter now into full blifs.

So having said, a while he stood, expecting
Thir universal shout and high applause
To fill his eare, when contrary he hears
On all sides, from innumerable tongues
A dismal universal hiss, the sound
Of public scorn; he wonderd, but not long
Had leasure, wondring at himself now more;
His Visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare,
His Armes clung to his Ribs, his Leggs entwining
Each other, till supplant'd down he fell
A monstrous Serpent on his Belly prone,
Reluctant, but in vaine, a greater power
Now rul'd him, punisht in the shape he sin'd,
According to his doom: he would have spoke,
But hifs for hifs return'd with forked tongue
To forked tongue, for now were all transform'd
Alike, to Serpents all as accessories
To his bold Riot: dreadful was the din
Of hissing through the Hall, thick swarming now
VVith complicated monsters head and taile,

Scorpion

Scorpion and Asp, and *Amphisbana* dire,
Ceraustes horn'd, *Hydrus* and *Elops* drear,
 And *Dipsas* (not so thick swarm'd once the Soil
 Bedropt with blood of *Gorgon*, or the Isle
Ophiusa) but still greatest hee the midst,
 Now Dragon grown, larger then whom the Sun
 Ingenderd in the *Pythian* Vale on slime,
 Huge *Python*, and his Power no less he seem'd
 Above the rest still to retain; they all
 Him follow'd issuing forth to th' open Field,
 VWhere all yet left of that revolted Rout
 Heav'n-fall'n, in station stood or just array,
 Sublime with expectation when to see
 In Triumph issuing forth thir glorious Chief;
 They saw, but other sight instead, a crowd
 Of ugly Serpents; horror on them fell,
 And horrid sympathie; for what they saw,
 They felt themselves now changing; down thir arms,
 Down fell both Spear and Shield, down they as fast,
 And the dire hiss renew'd, and the dire form
 Careht by Contagion, like in punishment,
 As in thir crime. Thus was th' applause they meant.
 Turn'd to exploding hiss, triumph to shame
 Cast on themselves from thir own mouths. There stood
 A Grove hard by, sprung up with this thir change,
 His will who reigns above, to aggravate
 Thir penance, laden with Fruit like that
 VWhich grew in Paradise, the bait of *Eve*
 Us'd by the Tempter: on that prospect strange
 Thir earnest eyes they fix'd, imagining
 For one forbidden Tree a multitude
 Now ris'n, to work them furdur woe or shame;
 Yet parcht with scalding thirst and hunger fierce,
 Though to delude them sent, could not abstain;

But

BOOK X. *Paradise Lost.* 267

But on they rould in heaps, and up the Trees
Climbing, sat thicker then the snake's locks
That curl'd *Megara*: greedily they pluck'd
The Frutage fair to sight, like that which grew
Neer that bituminous Lake where *Sodom* flam'd;
This more delusive, not the touch, but taste
Deceav'd; they fondly thinking to allay
Thir appetite with gust, instead of Fruit
Chew'd bitter Ashes, which th' offended taste
VVith spattering noise rejected: oft they assay'd,
Hunger and thirst constraining, drag'd as oft,
With hatefullest disrelish which'd thir jaws
With soot and cinders fill'd; so oft they fell
Into the same illusion, nor as Man (plag'd
Whom they triumph'd once lapst. Thus were they
And worn with Famine, long and ceaseless hiss,
Till thir lost shape, permitted, they resum'd,
Yearly enjoynd, some say, to undergo
This annual humbling certain number'd days,
To dash thir pride, and joy for Man seduc't.
However some tradition they dispers'd
Among the Heathen of thir purchase got,
Ahd Fabl'd how the Serpent, whom they call'd
Ophion with *Enrynome*, the wide
Encroaching *Eve* perhaps, had first the rule
Of high *Olympus*, thence by *Saturn* driv'n
And *Ops*, ere yet *Dictean* *Jove* was born.
Mean while in *Paradise* the hellish pair
Too soon arriv'd, *Sin* there in power before,
Once actual, now in body, and to dwell
Habitual habitant; behind her *Death*
Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet
On his pale Horse: to whom *Sin* thus began.

Second of *Satan* spreng, all conquering *Death*,

What

What thinkest thou of our Empire now, though earn'd
 With travail difficult, not better farr
 Then still at Hells dark threshold to have sate watch,
 Unnam'd, undreaded, and thy self half starv'd ?

VVhom thus the Sin-born Monster answerd soon.
 To mee, who with eternal Famin pine,
 Alike is Hell, or Paradise, of Heaven,
 There best, where most with ravin I may meet ;
 VVhich here, though plenteous, all too little seems
 To stuff this Maw, this vast unhide-bound Corps.

To whom th' incestuous Mother thus repli'd.
 Thou therefore on these Herbs, and Fruits, and Flours
 Feed first, on each Beast next, and Fish, and Fowle,
 No homely morsels, and whatever thing
 The Sithe of Time mowes down, devour unspar'd,
 Till I in Man residing through the Race,
 His thoughts, his looks, words, actions all infect,
 And season him thy last and sweetest prey.

This said, they both betook them several wayes,
 Both to destroy, or unimmortal make
 All kinds, and for destruction to mature
 Sooner or later ; which th' Almighty seeing,
 From his transcendent Seat the Saints among,
 To those bright Orders utterd thus, his voice.

See with what heat these Dogs of Hell advance
 To waste and havoc yonder World, which I
 So fair and good created ; and had still
 Kept in that State, had not the folly of Man
 Let in these wasteful Furies, who impute
 Folly to mee, so doth the Prince of Hell
 And his Adherents, that with so much ease
 I suffer them to enter and possess
 A place so heav'nly, and conniving seem
 To gratifie my scornful Enemies,

That

That laugh, as if transported with some fit
Of Passion, I to them had quitted all,
At random yielded up to their misrule;
And know not that I call'd and drew them thither
My Hell-hounds, to lick up the draff and filth
Which mans polluting Sin with taint hath shed
On what was pure, till cram'd and gorg'd, nigh burst
With suckt and glutted offal, at one sling
Of thy victorious Arm, well-pleasing Son,
Both Sin, and Death, and yawning Grave at last
Through Chaos hurl'd, obstruct the mouth of Hell
For ever, and seal up his ravenous Jaws.
Then Heav'n and Earth renew'd shall be made pure
To sanctitie that shall receive no staine:

Till then the Curse pronounc't on both precedes;
He ended, and the heav'nly Audience loud
Sung *Halleluia*, as the sound of Seas,
Through multitude that sung: Just are thy ways,
Righteous are thy Decrees on all thy Works;
Who can extenuate thee? Next, to the Son,
Destin'd restorer of Mankind, by whom
New Heav'n and Earth shall to the Ages rise;
Or down from Heav'n descend! Such was this song
While the Creator calling forth by name
His mightie Angels gave them severall charge,
As sorted best with present things. The Sun
Had first his precept so to move, so shine,
As might affect the Earth with cold and heat
Scarce tollerable; and from the North to call
Decrepit Winter; from the South to bring
Solstitial Summers heat. To the blanc Moone
Her office they prescrib'd, to th' other five
Their planetarie motions and aspects
In Sextile, Square, and Trine, and Opposite,

of

Of noxious efficacy, and when to joyne
 In Synod unbenigne, and taught the fixt
 Thir influence malignant when to shewre,
 Which of them rising with the Sun, or falling,
 Should prove tempestuous: To the VVinds they set
 Thir corners, when with bluster to confound
 Sea, Aire, and Shoar, the Thunder when to rowle
 VVith terror through the dark Aereal Hall.
 Some say he bid his Angels turn ascanse
 The Poles of Earth twice ten degrees and more
 From the Suns Axle; they with labour push'd
 Oblique the Centric Globe: Som say the Sun
 Was bid turn from th' Equinoctial Rode
 Like distant breadth to *Taurus*, with the Seav'n
Atlantick Sisters, and the *Spartan Twins*
 Up to the *Tropic Crab*; thence down amaine
 By *Leo* and the *Virgin* and the *Scales*,
 As deep as *Capricorne*, to bring in change
 Of Seasons to each Clime; else had the Spring
 Perpetual smil'd on Earth with vernant Flours,
 Equal in Days and Nights, except to those
 Beyond the polar Circles; to them Day
 Had unbenighted shon, while the low Sun
 To recompence his distance, in thir sight
 Had rounded still th' *Horizon*, and not known
 Of East or VVest, which had forbid the Snow
 From cold *Estotiland*, and South as farr
 Beneath *Magellan*. At that tasted Fruit
 The Sun, as from *Thyestean Banquet*, turn'd
 His course intended; else how had the VVorld
 Inhabited, though sinless, more then now,
 Avoided pinching cold and scorching heat?
 These changes in the Heav'ns, though slow; produc'd
 Like change on Sea and Land, sidereal blast,
 Vapour,

BOOK X. *Paradise Lost* 378

Vapour, and Mist, and Exhalation hot,
Corrupt and Pestilent: Now from the North
Of *Norumbega*, and the *Summed* shoar
Bursting thir brazen Dungeon, armed with ice
And snow and haile and stormie gust and flaw,
Boreas and *Caurus* and *Argestes* loud
And *Thrasos* rend the Woods and Seas upturn;
With adverse blast up-turns them from the South
Notus and *Afer* black with thundrous Clouds
From *Serrationa*; thwart of these as fierce
Forth rush the *Levant* and the *Ponent* Windes
Enrus and *Zephir* with thir lateral noise,
Sirocco, and *Libeccio*, Thus began
Outrage from liveless things; but Discord first
Daughter of Sin, among th' irrational,
Death introduc'd through fierce antipathy:
Beast now with Beast gan war, and Fowl with Fowl:
And Fish with Fish; to graze the Herb all leaving
Devour'd each other; nor stood much in awe
Of Man, but fled him, or with count'nance grim
Glar'd on him passing: these were from without
The growing miseries, which *Adam* saw
Alreadie in part though hid in gloomiest shade,
To sorrow abandon'd, but worse felt within,
And in a troubl'd Sea of passion tost,
Thus to disbur'd'n fought with sad complaint.

O miserable of happie! is this the end
Of this new glorious World, and mee so late
The Glory of that Glory, who now becom
Accurst of blessed, hid me from the face
Of God, who to behold was then my highth
Of happiness: yet well, if here would end
The miserie, I deserv'd it, and would beare
My own deservings; but this will not serve;

272 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK X.

All that I eat or drink, or shall beget,
 Is propagated curse. O voice once heard
 Delightfully, *Encrease* and *Multiply*,
 Now Death to heare ! for what can I encrease
 Or multiplie, but curses on my head ?
 Who of all Ages to succeed, but feeling
 The evil on him brought by me, will curse
 My Head, Ill fare our Ancestor impure,
 For this we may thank *Adam* ; but his thanks
 Shall be the execration ; so besides
 Mine own that bide upon me, all from mee
 Shall with a fierce reflux on mee redound,
 On mee as on thir natural center light
 Heavie, though in thir place. O fleeting joyes
 Of Paradise, deare bought with lasting woes !
 Did I request thee, Maker, from my Clay
 To mould me Man, did I sollicite thee
 From darkness to promote me, or here place
 In this delicious Garden ? as my will
 Concurd not to my being, it were but right
 And equal to reduce me to my dust,
 Desirous to resigne, and render back
 All I receav'd, unable to performe
 Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold
 The good I sought not. To the loss of that,
 Sufficient penaltie, why hast thou added
 The sense of endless woes ? inexplicable
 Thy Justice seems ; yet to say truth, too late,
 I thus contest ; then should have been refusd
 These terms whatever, when they were propos'd :
 Thou didst accept them ; wilt thou enjoy the good,
 Then cavil the conditions ? and though God
 Made thee without thy leave, what if thy Son
 Prove disobedient, and reprov'd, retort,

Where

Wherefore didst thou beget me? I sought it not;
Wouldst thou admit for his contempt of thee
That proud excuse? yet him not thy election,
But natural necessity begot.

God made thee of choice his own, and of his own
To serve him, thy reward was of his grace,
Thy punishment then justly is at his Will.

Be it so, for I submit; his doom is fair;
That dust I am, and shall to dust return:
O welcom hour whenever! why delays

His hand to execute what his Decree
Fixd on this day? why do I overlive,

Why am I mockt with death, and lengthnd out
To deathless pain? how gladly would I meet

Mortality my sentence, and be Earth
Insensible, how glad would lay me down

As in my Mothers lap? there I should rest
And sleep secure; his dreadful voyce no more

Would thunder in my ears, no fear of worse
To mee and to my offspring would torment me

With cruel expectation: Yet one doubt
Pursues me still, least all I cannot die,

Least that pure breath of Life, the Spirit of Man
Which God inspir'd, cannot together perish

With this corporeal Clod; then in the Grave,
Or in some other dismal place who knows

But I shall die a living Death? O thought
Horrid, if true! yet why? it was but breath

Of Life that sinn'd; what dies but what had life
And sin? the Body properly hath neither.

All of me then shall die: let this appease
The doubt since humane reach no further knows.

For though the Lord of all be infinite,
In his wrauth also? be it, man is not so,

But mortal doom'd. How can he exercise

T

Wrath

Wrath without end on Man whom Death must end?
Can he make deathless Death? that were to make
Strange contradiction, which to God himself
Impossible is held, as Argument
Of weakness, not of Power. Will he draw out,
For angers sake, finite to infinite
In punisht man, to satisfie his rigour
Satisfi'd never; that were to extend
His Sentence beyond dust and Natures Law,
By which all Causes else, according still
To the reception of thir matter act,
Not to th' extent of thir own-Sphear. But say
That Death be not one stroak, as I suppos'd,
Bereaving sense, but endless misery
From this day onward, which I feel begun
Both in me, and without me, and so last
To perpetuity; Ay me, that fear
Comes thundring back with dreadful revolution
On my defenseless head; both Death and I
Am found Eternal, and incorporate both,
Nor I on my part single, in me all
Posterity stands curst; Fair Patrimony
That I must leave ye, Sons; O were I able
To waste it all my self, and leave ye none!
So disinherited how would ye bleis
Me now ye curse! Ah, why should all Mankind
For one mans fault thus guiltless be condemn'd,
If guiltless? But from me what can proceed,
But all corrupt, both Mind and Will deprav'd,
Not to do onely, but to will the same
With me? how can they then acquitted stand
In sight of God? Him after all Disputes
Forc't I absolve: all my evasions vain,
And reasonings, though through Mazes, lead me still
But to my own conviction: first and last

Book X. *Paradise Lost.* 275

On mee, mee only, as the source and spring
Of all corruption, all the blame lights due ;
So might the wrath. Fond wish ! couldst thou sup-
That burden heavier then the Earth to bear (port
Then all the World much heavier, though divided
With that bad Woman ? Thus what thou desir'st
And what thou fearst, alike destroyes all hope
Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable
Beyond all past example and future,
To *Satan* only like both crime and doom.
O Conscience, into what Abyss of fears
And horrors hast thou driv'n me ; out of which
I find no way, from deep to deeper plung'd !

Thus *Adam* to himself lamented loud
Through the still Night, not now, as ere man fell,
Wholsom and cool, and mild, but with black Air
Accompanied, with damps and dreadful gloom,
Which to his evil Conscience represented
All things with double terrour : On the Ground
Outstrecht he lay, on the cold ground, and oft
Curs'd his Creation, Death as oft accus'd
Of tardy execution, since denounc't
The day of his offence. Why comes not Death,
Said hee, with one thrice acceptable stroke
To end me ? shall Truth fail to keep her word,
Justice Divine not hast'n to be just ?
But Death comes not at call, Justice Divine
Mends not her slowest pace for prayers or cries.
O Woods, O Fountains, Hillocks, Dales and Bowses,
With other echo late I taught your Shades
To answer, and resound farr other Song.
Whom thus afflicted when sad *Eve* beheld,
Desolate where she sate, approaching nigh,
Soft words to his fierce passion she assay'd,
But her with stern regard he thus repell'd.

Out of my sight, thou Serpent, that name best
Besits thee, with him leagu'd, thy self as false
And hateful; nothing wants, but that thy shape,
Like his, and colour Serpentine may shew
Thy inward fraud,, to warn all Creatures from thee
Henceforth; least that too heav'nly form, pretended
To hellish falshood, snare them. But for thee
I had persisted happy, had not thy pride
And wandering vanity, when lest was safe,
Rejected my forewarning, and disdain'd
Not to be trusted, longing to be seen
Though by the Devil himself, him overweening
To over-reach, but with the Serpent meeting
Fool'd and beguil'd, by him thou, I by thee,
To trust thee from my side, imagin'd wise,
Constant, mature, proof against all assaults,
And understood not all was but a shew
Rather then solid vertu, all but a Rib
Crooked by nature, bent, as now appears,
More to the part sinister from me drawn,
VVell if thrown out, as supernumerary
To my just number found. O why did God,
Creator wise, that peopl'd highest Heav'n
VVith Spirits Masculine, create at last
This novelty on Earth, this fair defect
Of Nature, and not fill the VVorld at once
VVith Men as Angels without Feminine,
Or find some other way to generate
Mankind? this mischief had not then befall'n,
And more that shall befall, innumerable
Disturbances on Earth through Femal snares,
And straight conjunction with this Sex: for either
He never shall find out fit Mate, but such
As some misfortune brings him, or mistake,
Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain

Through

BOOK X. Paradise Lost. 8277

Through her perverseness, but shall see her gaid
 By a farr worse, or if she love, withheld
 By Parents, or his happiest choice too late
 Shall meet, already linkt and VVedlock-bound
 To a fell adversary, his hate or shame :
 VVhich infinite calamity shall cause
 To humane Life, and household peace confound.
 He added not, and from her turn'd, but *Eve*
 Not so repulst, with Tears that ceas'd not flowing,
 And tresses all disorderd, at his feet
 Fell humble, and imbracing them, besaught
 His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint.
 Forsake me not thus, *Adam*, witness Heav'n
 VVhat love sincere and reverence in my heart
 I bear thee, and unweeting have offended,
 Unhappily deceav'd; thy suppliant
 I beg, and clasp thy knees; bereave me not,
 VVhereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,
 Thy counsel in this uttermost distress,
 My onely strength and stay: forlorn of thee,
 VVhither shall I betake me, where subsist?
 VVhile yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,
 Between us two let there be peace, both joyning,
 As joyn'd in injuries, one enmity
 Against a Foe by doom exprefs assign'd us,
 That cruel Serpent: On me exercise not
 Thy hatred for this misery befall'n,
 On me already lost, mee then thy self
 More miserable; both have sin'd, but thou
 Against God onely, I against God and thee,
 And to the place of judgment will return,
 There with my cries importune Heaven, that all
 The sentence from thy head remov'd may light
 On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe,
 Mee mee onely just object of his ire.

She ended weeping, and her lowly plight,
 Immoveable till peace obtain'd from fault
 Acknowledg'd and deplor'd, in *Adam* wrought
 Commiseration; soon his heart relented
 Towards her, his life so late and sole delight,
 Now at his feet submissive in distress,
 Creature so fair his reconciliation seeking,
 His counsel whom she had displeas'd, his aide;
 As one disarm'd, his anger all he lost,
 And thus with peaceful words uprais'd her soon.

Unwarie, and too desirous, as before,
 So now of what thou know'st not, who desir'st
 The punishment all on thy self; alas,
 Beare thine own first, ill able to sustaine
 His full wrath whose thou feel'st as yet left part,
 And my displeasure beart'st so ill. If Prayers
 Could alter high Decrees, I to that place
 Would speed before thee, and be louder heard,
 That on my head all might be visited,
 Thy frailtie and infirmer Sex forgiv'n,
 To me committed and by me expos'd.
 But rise, let us no more contend, nor blame
 Each other, blam'd enough else where, but strive
 In offices of Love, how we may light'n
 Each others burden in our share of woe;
 Since this days Death denounc't, if ought I see,
 Will prove no sudden, but a slow-pac't evill,
 A long days dying to augment our paine,
 And to our Seed (O hapless Seed!) deriv'd.

To whom thus *Eve*, recovering heart, repli'd.
Adam, by sad experiment I know
 How little weight my words with thee can finde,
 Found so erroneous, thence by just event
 Found so unfortunate; nevertheless,
 Restor'd by thee, vile as I am, to place

BOOK X. *Paradise Lost.* 279

Of new acceptance, hopeful to regain
 Thy Love, the sole contentment of my heart
 Living or dying, from thee I will not hide
 What thoughts in my unquiet brest are ris'n,
 Tending to some relief of our extremes,
 Or end, though sharp and sad, yet tolerable,
 As in our evils, and of easier choice.
 If care of our descent perplex us most,
 Which must be born to certain woe, devour'd
 By Death at last, and miserable it is
 To be to others cause of misery,
 Our own begotten, and of our Loines to bring
 Into this curst World a woful Race,
 That after wretched Life must be at last
 Food for so foule a Monster, in thy power
 It lies, yet ere conception to prevent
 The Race unblest, to being yet unbegot.
 Childless thou art, Childless remaine:
 So Death shall be deceav'd his glut, and with us two
 Be forc'd to satisfie his Rav'nous Maw.
 But if thou judge it hard and difficult,
 Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain
 From Loves due Rites, Nuptial imbraces sweet,
 And with desire languish without hope,
 Before the present object languishing
 With like desire, which would be miserie
 And torment less then none of what we dread.
 Then both our selves and Seed at once to free
 From what we fear for both, let us make short,
 Let us seek Death, or he not found, supply
 With our own hands his Office on our selves;
 Why stand we longer shivering under feares,
 That shew no end but Death, and have the power,
 Of many waies to die the shortest choosing.

Destruction with destruction to destroy.

She ended here, or vehement despaire
Broke off the rest; so much of Death her thoughts
Had entertain'd, as did her Cheeks with pale.
But *Adam* with such counsel nothing sway'd,
To better hopes his more attentive minde
Labouring had rais'd, and thus to *Eve* repli'd:

Eve, thy contempt of life and pleasure seems
To argue in thee something more sublime
And excellent then what thy minde contemnes;
But self-destruction therefore saught, refuses
That excellence thought in thee, and implies,
Not thy contempt, but anguish and regret
For loss of life and pleasure overlov'd.
Or if thou covet death, as utmost end
Of miserie, so thinking to evade
The penaltie pronounc't, doubt not but God
Hath wiselier arm'd his vengeful ire then so
To be forestall'd; much more I fear least Death
So snatcht will not exempt us from the paine
We are by doom to pay; rather such acts
Of contumacie will provoke the highest
To make Death in us live; Then let us seek
Some safer resolution, which methinks
I have in view, calling to minde with heed
Part of our Sentence, that thy Seed shall bruise
The Serpents head; piteous amends, unless
Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand Foe
Satan, who in the Serpent hath contriv'd
Against us this deceit: to crush his head
Would be revenge indeed; which will be lost
By Death brought on our selves, or Childless days
Resolv'd, as thou propos'st; so our Foe
Shall scape his punishment ordain'd, and wee
Instead shall double ours upon our heads.

No more be mention'd then of violence
 Against our selves, and wilful barrenness
 That cuts us off from hope, and savours onely
 Rancor and pride, impatience and despite,
 Reluctance against God and his just yoke
 Laid on our Necks. Remember with what mild
 And gracious temper he both heard and judg'd
 Without wrauth or reviling; wee expected
 Immediate dissolution, which we thought
 Vvas meant by Death that day, when lo, to thee
 Pains onely in Child-bearing were foretold,
 And bringing forth, soon recompenc't with joy,
 Fruit of thy Womb: On mee the Curse aslope
 Glanc'd on the ground, with labour I must earne
 My bread; what harm? Idleness had bin worse;
 My labour will sustaine me; and least Cold
 Or Heat should injure us, his timely care
 Hath unbefought provided, and his hands
 Cloath'd us unworthie, pitying while he judg'd;
 How much more, if we pray him, will his ear
 Be open, and his heart to pity incline,
 And teach us further by what means to shun
 Th' inclement Seasons, Raine, Ice, Haile and Snow,
 Which now the Sky with various Face begins
 To shew us in this Mountain, while the Winds
 Blow moist and keen, shattering the graceful locks
 Of these fair Spreading Trees; which bids us seek
 Som better shroud, som better warmth to cherish
 Our Limbs benumm'd, ere this diurnal Starr
 Leave cold the Night, how we his gather'd beams
 Reflected, may with matter sere foment,
 Or by collision of two bodiës grinde
 The Air attrite to Fire, as late the Clouds
 Justling or pusht with Winds rude in thir shock

Tine

282 *Paradise Lost.* Book X.

Time the slant Lightning, whose thwart flame driv'n
 Kindles the gummie bark of Firr or Pine, (down
 And sends a comfortable heat from farr,
 Which might supplie the Sun : Such Fire to use,
 And what may else be remedie or cure
 To evils which our own misdeeds have wrought,
 Hee will instruct us praying, and of Grace
 Beseeching him, so as we need not fear
 To pass commodiously this life, sustain'd
 By him with many comforts, till we end
 In dust, our final rest and native home.
 What better can we do, then to the place
 Repairing where he judg'd us, prostrate fall
 Before him reverent, and there confess
 Humbly our faults, and pardon beg, with tears
 Watering the ground, and with our sighs the Air
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
 Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.
 Undoubtedly he will relent and turn
 From his displeasure ; in whose look serene,
 When angry most he seem'd and most severe,
 What else but favor, grace, and mercie shon ?
 So spake our Father penitent, nor *Eve*
 Felt less remorse : they forthwith to the place
 Repairing where he judg'd them prostrate fell
 Before him reverent, and both confess'd
 Humbly thir faults, and pardon beg'd, with tears
 Watering the ground, and with thir sighs the Air
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
 Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.

The End of the Tenth Book.

Paradise

Paradise Lost.

BOOK XI.

THE ARGUMENT,

The Son of God presents to his Father the Prayers of our first Parents now repenting, and intercedes for them: God accepts them, but declares that they must no longer abide in Paradise; sends Michael with a Band of Cherubim to dispossess them; but first to reveal to Adam future things: Michaels coming down. Adam shews to Eve certain ominous signs; he discerns Michaels approach, goes out to meet him: the Angel denounces thir departure, Eve's Lamentation. Adam pleads, but submits: The Angel leads him up to a high Hill, sets before him in vision what shall happ'n till the Flood.

THus they in lowliest plight repentant stood
Praying, for from the Mercy-seat above
Prevenient Grace descending had remov'd
The stony from thir hearts, and made new
(flesh
Regenerate grow instead, that sighs now breath'd
Unutter-

Unutterable, which the Spirit of prayer
 Inspir'd and wing'd for Heav'n with speedier flight
 Than lowliest Oratorie: yet this port
 Not of mean suiters, nor important less
 Seem'd thir Petition, then when th' ancient Pair
 In Fables old, less ancient yet then these,
Deucalion and chaste *Pyrrha* to restore
 The Race of Mankind drown'd, before the Shrine
 Of *Themis* stood devout. To Heav'n thir prayers
 Flew up, nor misd the way, by envious windes
 Blow'n vāgabond or frustrate: in they pass'd
 Dimensionless through Heav'nly dores; then clad
 With incense, where the Golden Altar fum'd,
 By thir great Intercessor, came in sight
 Before the Fathers Throne: Them the glad Son
 Presenting, thus to intercede began.

See Father, what first fruits on Earth are sprung
 From thy implanted Grace in Man, these Sighs
 And Prayers, which in this Golden Censer, mixt
 With Incense, I thy Priest before thee bring,
 Fruits of more pleasing savour from thy seed
 Sow'n with contrition in his heart, then those
 Which his own hand manuring all the Trees
 Of Paradise could have produc't, ere fall'n
 From innocence. Now therefore bend thine ear
 To supplication, heare his sighs though mute;
 Unskilful with what words to pray, let mee
 Interpret for him, mee his Advocate
 And propitiation, all his works on mee
 Good or not good ingraft, my Merit those
 Shall perfect, and for these my Death shalt pay.
 Accept me, and in mee from these receive
 The smell of peace toward Mankind, let him live
 Before thee reconcil'd, at least his days

Numberd, though sad, till Death, his doom (which I
To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse)
To better life shall yeeld him, where with mee
All my redeemd may dwell in joy and blis,
Made one with me as I with thee am one.

To whom the Father, without Cloud, serene,
All thy request for Man, accepted Son,
Obtaine, all thy request was my Decree:
But longer in that Paradise to dwell,
The Law I gave to Nature him forbids:

Those pure immortal Elements that know
No gross, no unharmonious mixture foule,
Eject him tainted now, and purge him off

As a distemper, gross to aire as gross,
And mortal food, as may dispose him best
For dissolution wrought by Sin, that first

Distemperd all things, and of incorrupt
Corrupted. I at first with two fair gifts
Created him endowd, with Happiness

And Immortalitie: that fondly lost,
This other serv'd but to eternize woe;
Till I provided Death; so Death becomes

His final remedie, and after Life
Tri'd in sharp tribulation, and refin'd
By Faith and faithful works, to second Life,

Wak't in the renovation of the just,
Reassigns him up with Heav'n and Earth renewd.
But let us call to Synod all the Blest

Through Heav'n's wide bounds; from them I will not
My judgments, how with Mankind I proceed, (hide
As how with peccant Angels late they saw;

and in thir state though firm, stood more confirmd.
He ended, and the Son gave signal high
To the bright Minister that watcht, hec blew

His

His Trumpet, heard in *Oreb* since perhaps
 When God descended, and perhaps once more
 To sound at general Doom. Th' Angelic blast
 Fild all the Regions : from thir blisful Bows
 Of *Amarantin* Shade, Fountain or Spring,
 By the waters of Life, where ere they sate
 In fellowships of joy : the Sons of Light
 Hasted, resorting to the Summons high,
 And took thir Seats ; till from his Throne supream
 Th' Almighty thus pronounced his sovran Will.

O Sons, like one of us Man is become
 To know both Good and Evil, since his taste
 Of that defended Fruit ; but let him boast
 His knowledge of Good lost, and Evil got,
 Happier, had it suffic'd him to have known
 Good by it self, and Evil not at all.
 He sorrows now, repents, and prayes contrite,
 My motions in him, longer then they move,
 His heart I know, how variable and vain
 Self-left. Least therefore his now bolder hand
 Reach also of the Tree of Life, and eat,
 And live for ever, dream at least to live
 For ever, to remove him I decree,
 And send him from the Garden forth to Till
 The Ground whence he was taken, fitter soile.

Michael, this my behest have thou in charge,
 Take to thee from among the Cherubim
 Thy choice of flaming Warriours, least the Fiend
 Or in behalf of Man, or to invade
 Vacant possession som new trouble raise :
 Hast thee, and from the Paradise of God
 Without remorse drive out the sinful Pair,
 From hallowd ground th' unholie, and denounce
 To them and to thir Progenie from thence

Book XI. *Paradise Lost.* 282

Perpetual banishment. Yet least they faint
At the sad Sentence rigorously urg'd,
For I behold them softn'd and with tears
Bewailing thir excess, all terror hide.
If patiently thy bidding they obey,
Dismiss them not disconsolate; reveale
To *Adam* what shall come in future dayes;
As I shall thee enlighten, intermix
My Covenant in the womans seed renewd;
So send them forth, though sorrowing, yet in peace;
And on the East side of the Garden place,
Where entrance up from *Eden* easiest climbs,
Cherubic watch, and of a Sword the flame
VWide waving, all approach farr off to fright,
And guard all passage to the Tree of Life:
Least Paradise a receptacle prove
To Spirits foule, and all my Trees thir prey,
VVith whose stol'n Fruit Man once more to delude.

He ceas'd; and th' Archangelic Power prepar'd
For swift descent, with him the Cohort bright
Of watchful Cherubim; four faces each
Had, like a double *Janus*, all thir shape
Spangl'd with eyes more numerous then those
Of *Argus*, and more wakeful then to drouze,
Charm'd with *Arcadian* Pipe, the Pastoral Reed
Of *Hermes*, or his opiate Rod. Mean while
To resalute the VWorld with sacred Light
Leucothea wak'd, and with fresh dews inbalmd
The Earth, when *Adam* and first Matron *Eve*
Had ended now thir Orisons, and found
Strength added from above, new hope to spring
Out of despaire, joy, but with fear yet linkt;
VWhich thus to *Eve* his welcome words renewd,
Eve, easily may Faith admit, that all

The

288 Paradise Lost. Book XI.

The good which we enjoy, from Heav'n descends;
But that from us ought should ascend to Heav'n
So prevalent as to concerne the mind
Of God high-blest, or to incline his will,
Hard to belief may seem; yet this will Prayer,
Or one short sigh of humane breath, up-borne
Ev'n to the Seat of God: For since I taught
By Prayer th' offended Deitie to appease,
Kneel'd and before him humbl'd all my heart,
Methought I saw him placable and mild,
Bending his care; perswasion in me gre w
That I was heard with favour; peace returnd
Home to my Brest, and to my memorie
His promise, that thy Seed shall bruise our Foe;
Which then not minded in dismay, yet now
Assures me that the bitterness of death
Is Past, and we shall live! Whence Haile to thee,
Eve rightly call'd, Mother of all Mankind,
Mother of all things living, since by thee
Man is to live, and all things live for Man.

To whom thus *Eve* with sad demeanour meek.
Ill worthie I such title should belong
To me transgressor, who for thee ordaind
A help, became thy snare; to mee reproach
Rather belongs, distrust and all dispraise:
But infinite in pardon was my Judge,
That I who first brought Death on all, am grac't
The source of life; next favourable thou,
Who highly thus to entitle me voutsaf'st,
Farr other name deserving: But the Field
To labour calls us now with sweat impos'd,
Though after sleepleess Night; for see the Morn,
All unconcern'd with our unrest, begins
Her rosie progress smiling, let us forth,

BOOK XI. *Paradise Lost.* 289

I never from thy side henceforth to stray,
Where ere our dayes work lies, though now enjoind
Laborious, till day droop; while here we dwell,
What can be toillom in these pleasant Walkes?
Here let us live, though in fall'n state content.

So spake, so wish'd much-humbl'd *Eve*, but Fate
Subscrib'd not; Nature first gave Signs, impress
On Bird, Beast, Aire, Aire suddenly eclips'd
After short blush of Morn; nigh in her sight
The Bird of *Jove*, stoopt from his aerie tour,
Two Birds of gayest plume before him drove:
Down from a Hill the Beast that reigns in Woods,
First hunter then, pursu'd a gentle brace,
Goodliest of all the Forrest, Hart and Hinde;
Direct to th' Eastern Gate was bent thir flight.

Adam observ'd, and with his Eye the chase
Pursuing, not unmov'd to *Eve* thus spake.

O *Eve*, some furdur change awaits us nigh,
Which Heav'n by these mute signs in Nature shews
Forerunners of his purpose, or to warn
Us haply too secure of our discharge
From penaltie, because from death releast
Some dayes; how long and what till then our life,
Who knows, or more then this, that we are dust,
And thither must return and be no more.
Why else this double object in our sight
Of flight pursu'd in th' Air and ore the ground
One way the self-same hour? why in the East
Darkness ere Dayes mid-course, and Morning light
More orient in yon Western Cloud that draws
O're the blew Firmament a radiant white,
And slow descends, with something heav'nly fraught.

He err'd not, for by this the heav'nly Bands
Down from a Sky of Jasper lighted now

290 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK XI.

In Paradise, and on a Hill made alt,
 A glorious Apparition, had not doubt
 And carnal fear that day dimm'd *Adam's* eye.
 Nor that more glorious, when the Angels met
Jacob in *Mahanaim* where he saw
 The field Pavilion'd with his Guardians bright ;
 Nor that which on the flaming Mount appeerd
 In *Dothan*, cover'd with a Camp of Fire,
 Against the Syrian King, who to surprize
 One Man, Assassin-like had levied Warr,
 Warr unproclam'd. The Princely Hierarch
 In thir bright stand, there left his Powers to seise
 Possession of the Garden ; hee alone,
 To find where *Adam* shelterd, took his way,
 Not unperceav'd of *Adam*, who to *Eve*,
 While the great Vistant approachd, thus spake.

Eve, now expect great tidings, which perhaps
 Of us will soon determin, or impose
 New Laws to be observ'd ; for I descrie
 From yonder blazing Cloud that veils the Hill
 One of the heav'nly Host, and by his Gate
 None of the meanest, some great Potentate
 Or of the Thrones above, such Majestic
 Invests him coming ? yet not terrible,
 That I should fear, nor sociably mild,
 As *Raphael*, that I should much confide,
 But solemn, whom not to offend,
 With reverence I must meet, and thou retire.
 He ended ; and th' Arch-Angel soon drew nigh,
 Not in his shape Celestial, but as Man
 Clad to meet Man ; over his lucid Armes
 A militarie Vest of purple flow'd
 Livelier then *Melibeon*, or the graine
 Of *Sarra*, worn by Kings and Heroes o'd

BOOK XI. *Paradise Lost.* 221

In time of Truce; *Iris* had dipt the wooff;
His starry Helm unbuckl'd shew'd him prime
In Manhood where Youth ended; by his side
As in a glistering *Zodiac* hung the Sword,
Satan's dire dread, and in his hand the Spear.
Adam bowd low, hee Kingly from his State
Inclin'd not, but his coming thus declar'd.

Adam, Heav'ns high behest no Preface needs:
Sufficient that thy Prayers are heard, and Death,
Then due by sentence when thou didst transgress,
Defeated of his seizure many dayes
Giv'n thee of Grace, wherein thou mayst repent;
And one bad Act with many Deeds well done
Mayst cover: well may then thy Lord appeas'd
Redeem thee quite from Deaths rapacious claim;
But longer in this Paradise to dwell
Permits not; to remove thee I am come,
And send thee from the Garden forth to till
The ground whence thou wast tak'n, fitter Soile.

He added not, for *Adam* at the news
Heart-struck with chilling gripe of sorrow stood,
That all his senses bound; *Eve*, who unseen
Yet all had heard, with audible lament
Discover'd soon the place of her retire.

O unexpected stroke, worse then of Death!
Must I thus leave thee Paradise? thus leave
Thee Native Soile, these happy Walks and Shades,
Fit haunt of Gods? where I had hope to spend,
Quiet though sad, the respite of that day
That must be mortal to us both. O flours,
That never will in other Climate grow,
My early visitation, and my last.
At Eev'n, which I bred up with tender hand
From the first opening bud, and gave ye Names,
Who

Who now shall rear ye to the Sun, or rank
 Your Tribes, and water from th' ambrosial Fount?
 Thee lastly nuptial Bowre, by me adorn'd
 With what to sight or smell was sweet; from thee
 How shall I part, and whither wander down
 Into a lower World, to this obscure
 And wilde, how shall we breath in other Aire
 Less pure, accusom'd to immortal Fruits?

Whom thus the Angel interrupted milde.
 Lament not *Eve*, but patiently resign
 What justly thou hast lost; nor set thy heart,
 Thus over-fond, on that which is not thine;
 Thy going is not lonely, with thee goes
 Thy Husband, him to follow thou art bound;
 Where he abides, think there thy Native soile.

Adam by this from the cold sudden damp
 Recovering, and his scatter'd spirits return'd,
 To *Michael* thus his humble words address'd.

Celestial, whether among the Thrones, or nam'd
 Of them the Highest, for such of shape may seem
 Prince above Princes, gently hast thou tould
 Thy Message, which might else in telling wound,
 And in performing end us; what besides
 Of sorrow and dejection and despair
 Our frailty can sustain, thy tydings bring,
 Departure from this happy place, our sweet
 Recess, and onely consolation left
 Familiar to our eyes, all places else
 Inhospitable appear and desolate,
 Nor knowing us nor known: and if by prayer
 Incessant I could hope to change the will
 Of him who all things can, I would not cease
 To weary him with my assiduous cries:
 But prayer against his absolute Decree

No more avails then breath against the wind,
 Blown stifling back on him that breaths it forth :
 Therefore to his great bidding I submit.
 This most afflicts me, that departing hence,
 As from his face I shall be hid, depriv'd
 His blessed count'nance ; here I could frequent,
 With worship, place by place where he voutsaf'd
 Presence Divine, and to my Sons relate ;
 On this Mount he appeard, under this Tree
 Stood visible, among these Pines his voice
 I heard, here with him at this Fountain talkt :
 So many grateful Altars I would rear
 Of grassie Terse, and pile up every Stone
 Of lustre from the brook, in memory,
 Or monument to Ages, and thereon
 Offer sweet smelling Gumms and Fruits and Flours :
 In yonder nether World where shall I seek
 His bright appearances, or footstep trace ?
 For though I fled him angry, yet recall'd
 To life prolong'd and promis'd Race, I now
 Gladly behold though but his utmost skirts
 Of glory, and farr off his steps adore.

To whom thus *Michael* with regard benign.
Adam, thou knowst Heav'n his, and all the Earth,
 Not this Rock onely ; his Omnipresence fills
 Land, Sea and Aire, and every kinde that lives,
 Fomented by his virtual power and warmd :
 All th' Earth he gave thee to possess and rule,
 No despicable gift ; surmise not then
 His presence to these narrow bounds confin'd
 Of Paradise or *Eden* : this had been
 Perhaps thy Capital Seat, from whence had spread
 All generations, and had hither come
 From all the ends of th' Earth, to celebrate

294 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK XI.

And reverence thee thir great Progenitor.
 But this præminence thou hast lost, brought down
 To dwell on even ground now with thy Sons :
 Yet doubt not but in Vally and in Plain
 God is as here, and will be found alike
 Present, and of his presence many a sign
 Still following thee, still compassing thee round
 With goodness and paternal Love, his Face
 Express, and of his steps the track Divine.
 Which that thou mayst believe, and be confirm'd
 Ere thou from hence depart, know I am sent
 To shew thee what shall come in future dayes
 To thee and to thy Offspring; good with bad
 Expect to hear, supernal Grace contending
 With sinfulness of Men ; thereby to learn
 True patience, and to temper joy with fear
 And pious sorrow, equally chur'd
 By moderation, either state to bear,
 Prosperous or adverse : so shalt thou lead
 Safest thy life, and best prepar'd endure
 Thy mortal passage when it come. Ascend
 This Hill ; let *Eve* (for I have drencht her eyes)
 Here sleep below while thou to foresight wak'st,
 As once thou slepst, while *Shee* to life was form'd.

To whom thus *Adam* gratefully repli'd.
 Ascend, I follow thee, safe Guide, the path
 Thou leadst me, and to the hand of Heav'n submit,
 However chastning, to the evil turn
 My obvious breast, arming to overcome
 By suffering, and earn rest from labour won,
 If so I may attain. So both ascend
 In the Visions of God : It was a Hill
 Of Paradise the highest, from whose top
 The Hemisphere of Earth in clearest Ken

Stretcht

Stretcht out to the amplest reach of prospect lay.
 Not higher that Hill nor wider looking round
 Whereon for different cause the Tempter set
 Our second *Adam* in the Wilderness,
 To shew him all Earths Kingdoms and thir Glory.
 His Eye might there command wherever stood
 City of old or modern Fame, the Seat
 Of mightiest Empire, from the destined VValls
 Of *Cambalu*, seat of *Cathaian* Can
 And *Samarchand* by *Oxus*, *Temirs* Throne,
 To *Paquin* of *Sinaan* Kings, and thence
 To *Agra* and *Labor* of great *Mogul*
 Down to the golden *Cheersonese*, or where
 The *Persian* in *Ecbatan* sate, or since
 In *Hispahan*, or where the *Russian* *Ksar*
 In *Mosco*, or the *Sultan* in *Bizance*,
Turchestan-born; nor could his eye not ken
 Th' Empire of *Negus* to his utmost Port
Ercoco and the less *Maritim* Kings
Mombaza, and *Quiloe*, and *Melind*,
 And *Sofala* thought *Ophir*, to the Realm
 Of *Congo*, and *Angola* fardest South;
 Or thence from *Niger* Flood to *Atlas* Mount
 The Kingdoms of *Almansor*, *Fex*, and *Sus*,
Marocco and *Algiers*, and *Tremisen*,
 On *Europe* thence, and where *Rome* was to sway
 The VVorld: in Spirit perhaps he also saw
 Rich *Mexico* the seat of *Motexume*,
 And *Cusco* in *Pern*, the richer seat
 Of *Atibalipa*, and yet unspoil'd
Guiana, whose great City *Geryons* Sons
 Call *El Dorado*: but to nobler sights
Michael from *Adams* eyes the Filme remov'd
 VVhich that false Fruit that promis'd clearer sight

296 *Paradise Lost.* Book XI.

Had bred ; then purg'd with Euphrasie and Rue
 The Visual Nerve, for he had much to see ;
 And from the Well of Life three drops instill'd.
 So deep the power of these Ingredients pierc'd,
 Eevn to the inmost seat of mental sight,
 That *Adam* now enforc't to close his eyes,
 Sunk down and all his Spirits became intransit :
 But him the gentle Angel by the hand
 Soon rais'd, and his attention thus recall'd.

Adam, now ope thine eyes, and first behold
 Th' effects which thy Original crime hath wrought
 In some to spring from thee, who never toucht
 Th' excepted Tree, nor with the Snake conspir'd,
 Nor sinn'd thy sin, yet from that derive
 Corruption to bring forth more violent deeds.

His eyes he op'nd, and beheld a field,
 Part arable and tilth, whereon were Sheaves
 New reapt, the other part Sheep-walks and foulds ;
 I'th' midst an Altar as the Land-mark stood
 Rustic of grassie sord ; thither anon
 A sweaty Reaper from his Tillage brought
 First Fruits, the green Eare, and the yellow Sheaf
 Uncull'd, as came to hand ; a Shepherd next
 More meek came with the Firstlings of his Flock
 Choicest and best ; then sacrificing, laid
 The Inwards and thir Fat, with Incense strew'd,
 On the cleft VVood, and all due Rites performd.
 His Offering soon propitious Fire from Heav'n
 Consum'd with nimble glance, and grateful steam ;
 The others not, for his was not sincere ;
 VVhereat hee inly rag'd, and as they talkt,
 Smote him into the Midriff with a stone
 That beat out life ; he fell, and deadly pale
 Gr pand out his Soul with gushing blood effus'd.

Much

BOOK XI. *Paradise Lost.* 297

Much at that sight was *Adam* in his heart
Dismai'd, and thus in haste to th' Angel cri'd.

O Teacher, some great mischief hath befall'n
To that meek Man, who well had sacrific'd;
Is Pictie thus and pure Devotion paid?

T' whom *Michael* thus, hee also mov'd, repli'd.
These two are Brethren, *Adam*, and to come
Out of thy loyns; th' unjust the just hath slain,
For envy that his Brothers Offering found
From Heav'n acceptance; but the bloodie Fact
Will be aveng'd, and th' others Faith approv'd
Loose no reward, though here thou see him die,
Rowling in dust and gore. To which our Sire,

Alas, both for the deed and for the cause!
But have I now seen Death? Is this the way
I must return to native dust? O sight
Of terroure, foul and ugly to behold,
Horrid to think, how horrible to feel!

To whom thus *Michael*. Death thou hast seen
In his first shape on man; but many shapes
Of Death, and many are the wayes that lead
To his grim Cave, all dismal; yet to sense
More terrible at th' entrance then within.
Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die,
By Fire, Flood, Famin, by Intemperance more
In Meats and drinks, which on the Earth shall bring
Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew
Before thee shall appear; that thou mayst know
What miserie th' inabstinence of *Eve*
Shall bring on men. Immediately a place
Before his eyes appeard, sad, noysom, dark,
A Lazar-house it seem'd, wherein were laid
Numbers of all diseas'd, all maladies
Of gasty Spasim, or racking torture, qualmes

Of heart-sick Agonie, all feavorous kinds,
 Convulsions, Epilepsies, fierce Catarrhs,
 Intestine Stone and Ulcer, Colic pangs,
 Dæmoniac Phrenzie, moaping Melancholie,
 And Moon-struck madness, pining Atrophie,
 Marasmus, and wide-wasting Pestilence,
 Dropsies, and Asthma's, and Joint-racking Rheums.
 Dire was the rolling, deep the groans, despair'd
 Tended the sick buliest from Couch to Couch;
 And over them triumphant Death his Dart
 Shook, but delay'd to strike, though oft invoked
 With vows, as thir chief good, and final hope.
 Sight so deform what heart of Rock could long
 Drie-ey'd behold? *Adam* could not; but wept;
 Though not of Woman born; compassion quell'd
 His best of Man, and gave him up to tears
 A space, till firmer thoughts restrain'd excess
 And scarce recovering words his plaint renew'd.
 O miserable Mankind, to what fall
 Degraded, to what wretched state reserv'd!
 Better end heer unborn. Why is life giv'n
 To be thus wrested from us? rather why
 Obtruded on us thus? who if we knew
 What we receive, would either not accept
 Life offer'd, or soon beg to lay it down,
 Glad to be so dismiss'd in peace. Can thus
 Th' Image of God in man created once
 So goodly and erect, though faultie linde,
 To such unlightly sufferings be debas'd
 Under inhuman pains? Why should not Man,
 Retaining still Divine similitude
 In part, from such deformities be free,
 And for his Makers Image sake exempt?

Thir Makers Image, answerd *Michael*, then
 Forsook them, when themselves they villifi'd
 To serve ungovern'd appetite, and took
 His Image whom they serv'd, a brutish vice,
 Inductive mainly to the sin of *Eve*.
 Therefore so abject is thir punishment,
 Disfiguring not Gods likeness, but thir own,
 Or if his likeness, by themselves defac't
 While they pervert pure Natures healthful rules
 To loathsom sickness, worthily, since they
 Gods Image did not reverence in themselves.

I yield it just, said *Adam*, and submit.
 But is there yet no other way, besides
 These painful passages, how we may come
 To Death, and mix with our connatural dust?

There is, said *Michael*, if thou well observe
 The rule of not too much, by temperance taught
 In what thou eatst and drinkst, seeking from thence
 Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight,
 Till many years over thy head return:
 So maist thou live, till like ripe Fruit thou drop
 Into thy Mothers lap, or be with ease
 Gatherd, not harshly pluckt, for death mature:
 This is old age; but then thou must outlive
 Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will change
 To witherd weak and gray; thy Senses then
 Obruse, all taste of pleasure must forgoe,
 To what thou hast, and for the Aire of youth
 Hopeful and cheerful, in thy blood will reigne
 A melancholly damp of cold and dry:
 To weigh thy Spirits down, and last consume
 The Balme of Life. To whom our Ancestor.

Henceforth I fly not Death, nor would prolong
 Life much, bent rather how I may be quit

Fairest

Fairest and easiest of this combrous charge,
Which I must keep till my appointed day
Of rendring up, and patiently attend
My dissolution. *Michael* repli'd,

Nor love thy Life, nor hate; but what thou liv'st
Live well, how long or short permit to Heav'n :
And now prepare thee for another sight.

He look'd and saw a spacious Plaine, whereon
Were tents of various hue; by some were herds
Of Cattel grazing: others, whence the sound
Of Instruments that made melodious chime
Was heard, of Harp and Organ; and who moov'd
Thir stops and chords was seen: his volant touch
Instinct through all proportions low and high
Fled and pursu'd transverse the resonant fugue.
In other part stood one who at the Forge
Labouring, two massie clods of Iron and Brasse
Had melted (whether found where casual fire
Had wasted woods on Mountain or in Vale,
Down to the veins of Earth, thence gliding hot
To som Caves mouth, or whether washt by stream
From underground) the liquid Ore he dreind
Into fit moulds prepar'd; from which he form'd
First his own Tools, then, what might else be wrought
Fusil or grav'n in mett'le. After these,
But on the higher side a different sort
From the high neighbouring Hills, which was thir
Down to the Plain descended: by thir guise (Seat,
Just men they seem'd, and all thir study bent
To worship God aright, and know his works
Not hid, nor those things last which might preserve
Freedom and Peace to men: they on the Plain
Long had not walkt, when from the Tents behold
A Beavie of fair Women, richly gay

In

In Gems and wanton dress; to the Harp they sung
Soft amorous Ditties, and in dance came on:
The Men though grave, ey'd them, and let thir eyes
Rove without rein, till in the amorous Net
Fast caught, they lik'd, and each his liking chose;
And now of love they treat till th' Eevning Star
Loves Harbinger appear'd; then all in heat
They light the Nuptial Torch, and bid invoke
Hymen, then first to marriage Rites invok't:
With Feast and Musick all the Tents resound.
Such happy interview and fair event
Of love and youth not lost, Songs, Garlands, Flours,
And charming Symphonies attacht the heart
Of *Adam*, soon inclin'd to admit delight,
The bent of Nature; which he thus exprest.

True opener of mine eyes, prime Angel blest,
Much better seems this Vision, and more hope
Of peaceful dayes portends, then those two past;
Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse,
Here Nature seems fulfilld in all her ends.

To whom thus *Michael*. Judg not what is best
By pleasure, though to Nature seeming meet,
Created, as thou art, to nobler end
Holy and pure, conformity divine.

Those Tents thou sawst so pleasant, were the Tents
Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his Race
Who slew his Brother; studious they appear
Of Arts that polish Life, Inventers rare,
Unmindful of thir Maker, though his Spirit
Taught them, but they his gifts acknowledg'd none.
Yet they a beauteous Ofspring shall beget;
For that fair femal Troop thou sawst, that seemd
Of Goddeses, so blithe, so smooth, so gay,
Yet empty of all good wherein consists

VVomans

302 *Paradise Lost.* Book XI

Womans domestic honour and chief praise;
 Bred onely and completed to the taste
 Of lustful appetence, to sing, to dance,
 To dress, and trouble the Tongue, and roule the Eye,
 To these that sober Race of Men, whose lives
 Religious titl'd them the Sons of God,
 Shall yield up all thir vertue, all thir fame
 Ignobly, to the traines and to the smiles
 Of these fair Arheists, and now swim in joy,
 (Erelong to swim at large) and laugh; for which
 The world erelong a world of tears must weep.

To whom thus *Adam* of short joy bereft.

O pittie and shame, that they who to live well
 Enterd so faire, should turn aside to tread
 Paths indirect, or in the mid way faint!
 But still I see the tenor of Mans woe
 Holds on the same, from Woman to begin.

From Mans effeminate slackness it begins,
 Said th' Angel, who should better hold his place
 By wisdom, and superiour gifts receav'd.
 But now prepare thee for another Scene.

He lookd and saw wide Territorie spread
 Before him, Towns, and Rural works between,
 Cities of Men with lofty Gates and Towrs,
 Concourse in Arms, fierce Faces threatening Warr,
 Giants of mighty Bone, and bould emprise;
 Part wield thir Arms, part curb the foaming Steed,
 Single or in Array of Battle rang'd
 Both Horse and Foot, nor idly mustering stood;
 One way a Band select from forage drives
 A herd of Beeves, faire Oxen and faire Kine
 From a fat Meddow ground; or fleecy Flock,
 Ewes and thir bleating Lambs over the Plaine
 Thir Bootie; scarce with Life the Shepherds fly,

But

But call in aide, which makes a bloody Fray;
 With cruel Tournament the Squadrons joine;
 Where Cattle pastur'd late, now scatter'd lies
 With Carcasses and Arms th' ensanguin'd Field
 Deserted: Others to a Citie strong
 Lay Seige, encampt; by Batterie, Scale, and Mine,
 Assaulting; others from the wall defend
 With Dart and Jav'lin, Stones and sulphurous Fire;
 On each part the scepter'd Haraldis call
 To Councel in the Citie Gates: anon
 Grey-headed men and grave, with Warriours mixt,
 Assemble, and Harangues are heard, but soon
 In factious opposition, till at last
 Of middle Age one rising, eminent
 In wise deport spake much of Right and Wrong,
 Of Justice, of Religion, Truth and Peace,
 And Judgment from above: him old and young
 Exploded and had seiz'd with violent hands,
 Had not a Cloud descending snatch'd him thence
 Unseen amid the throng: so violence
 Proceeded, and Oppression, and Sword-Law
 Through all the Plain, and refuge none was found.
 Adam was all in tears, and to his guide
 Lamenting turn'd full sad; O what are these,
 Deaths Ministers, not Men, who thus deal Death
 Inhumanly to men, and multiply
 Ten thousand fould the sin of him who slew
 His Brother: for of whom such massacre
 Make they but of thir Brethren, men of men?
 But who was that Just Man, whom had not Heav'n
 Rescu'd, had in his Righteousness bin lost?
 To whom thus Michael. These are the product
 Of those ill mated Marriages thou saw'st:

Where

304 **Paradise Lost. Book XI.**

Where good with bad were matcht, who of them
 Abhor to joyn; and by imprudence mixt, (selves
 Produce prodigious Births of bodie or mind.
 Such were these Giants, men of high renown;
 For in those dayes Might onely shall be admir'd,
 And Valour and Heroic Vertu call'd;
 To overcome in Battle, and subdue
 Nations, and bring home spoils with infinite
 Man-slaughter, shall be held the highest pitch
 Of human Glory, and for Glory done
 Of triumph, to be styl'd great Conquerours,
 Patrons of Mankind, Gods, and Sons of Gods,
 Destroyers rightlier call'd and Plagues of men.
 Thus Fame shall be atchiv'd, renown on Earth,
 And what most merits fame in silence hid.
 But hee the seventh from thee, whom thou beheldst
 The onely righteous in a World perverse,
 And therefore hated, therefore so beset
 With Foes for daring single to be just,
 And utter odious Truth, that God would come
 To judge them with his Saints: Him the most High
 Rapt in a balmie Cloud with winged Steeds
 Did, as thou sawst, receave, to walk with God
 High in Salvation and the Climes of blis
 Exempt from Death; to shew thee what reward
 Awaits the good, the rest what punishment:
 Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold.

He look'd, and saw the face of things quite chang'd,
 The brazen Throat of Warr had ceast to roar,
 All now was turn'd to jollitie and game,
 To luxurie and riot, feast and dance,
 Marrying or prostituting as befell,
 Rape or Adulterie, where passing faire
 Allurd them; thence from Cups to civil Broiles.

At length a Reverend Sire among them came;
 And of thir doings great dislike declar'd,
 And testifi'd against their wayes; he oft
 Frequented thir Assemblies, where so met,
 Triumphs or Festivals, and to them preachd
 Conversion and Repentance, as to Souls
 In Prison under Judgments imminent:
 But all in vain: which when he saw, he ceas'd
 Contending, and remov'd his Tents farr off;
 Then from the Mountain hewing Timber tall,
 Began to build a Vessel of huge bulk
 Measur'd by Cubit, length and breadth, and highth,
 Smeard round with Pitch, and in the side a dore
 Contriv'd, and of Provisions laid in large
 For Man and Beast: when loe a wonder strange!
 Of every Beast and Bird, and Insect small
 Came scavens, and pairs, and enterd in, as taught
 Thir order: last the Sire, and his three Sons
 With thir four Wives; and God made fast the dore.
 Meanwhile the Southwind rose, & with black wings
 Wide hovering, all the Clouds together drove
 From under Heaven; the Hills to thir supply
 Vapor, and Exhalation dusk and moist,
 Sent up amain; and now the thick'nd Sky
 Like a dark Ceeling stood; down rush'd the Rain
 Impetuous, and continu'd till the Earth
 No more was seen; the floating Vessel swum
 Uplifted; and secure with beaked prow
 Rodetilt'ng o're the Waves, all dwellings else
 Flood overwhelm'd, and them with all their pomp
 Deep under water rould; Sea cover'd Sea,
 Sea without shoar; and in their Palaces
 Where luxury late reign'd: Sea-monsters whelp'd
 And stabl'd; of Mankind, so numerous late,

306 **Paradise Lost.** BOOK XI

All left, in one small bottom swim imbarke.
 How didst thou grieve then, *Adam*, to behold
 The end of all thy Offspring, end so sad,
 Depopulation; thee another Floud,
 Of tears and sorrow a Floud thee also drown'd,
 And sunk thee as thy Sons; till gently reard
 By th' Angel, on thy feet thou stoodst at last,
 Though comfortless, as when a Father mourns
 His Children, all in view destroy'd at once;
 And scarce to th' Angel utterdst thus thy plaint.
 O Visions ill foreseen! better had I
 Liv'd ignorant of future, so had borne
 My part of evil onely, each days lot
 Enough to bear; those now that were dispens'd
 The burd'n of many Ages, on me light
 At once by my foreknowledge gaining Birth
 Abortive, to torment me ere thir being,
 With thought that they must be. Let no man seek
 Henceforth to be foretold what shall besall
 Him or his Children, evil he may be sure,
 Which neither his foreknowing can prevent,
 And hee the future evil shall no less
 In apprehension then in substance feel
 Grievous to bear: but that care now is past,
 Man is not whom to warn: those few escap'd
 Famin and anguish will at last consume
 Wandring that warry Desert: I had hope
 When violence was ceas'd, and Warr on Earth;
 All would have then gon well, peace would have
 With length of happy days the race of man; (crownd
 But I was far deceav'd; for now I see
 Peace to corrupt no less then Warr to waste.
 How comes it thus? unfou'd, Celestial Guide,
 And whether here the Race of man will end.

To

BOOK XI. *Paradise Lost.* 307

To whom thus *Michael*. Those whom last thou sawst
 In Triumph and luxurious wealth, are they
 First seen in acts of prowess eminent
 And great exploits, but of true vertue void ;
 Who having spilt much blood, and don much waste
 Subduing Nations, and achievd thereby
 Fame in the World, high titles, and rich prey,
 Shall change thir course to pleasure, ease and sloth,
 Surfet and lust, till wantonness and pride
 Raise out of friendship hostile deeds in Peace.
 The conquerd also and enslav'd by Warr
 Shall with thir freedom lost all vertue loose
 And fear of God, from whom thir piety seign'd
 In sharp contest of Battel found no aid
 Against Invaders ; therefore cold in zeal
 Thenceforth shall practice how to live secure,
 Worldly or dissolute, on what thir Lords
 Shall leave them to enjoy ; for th' Earth shall bear
 More then enough, that temperance may be try'd :
 So all shall turn degenerate, all deprav'd,
 Justice and Temperance, Truth and Faith forgot ;
 One Man except, the onely Son of light
 In a dark Age, against example good,
 Against allurement, custom, and a V World
 Offended ; fearless of reproach and scorn,
 Or violence, hee of thir wicked wayes
 Shall them admonish, and before them set
 The paths of righteousness, how much more safe,
 And full of peace, denouncing wrauth to come
 On thir impietie ; and shall return
 Of them derided, but of God observ'd
 The one just Man alive ; by his command
 Shall build a wondrous Ark, as thou beheldst,
 To save himself and household from amidst

A world devote to univerſal rack.
 No ſooner he with them of Man and Beaſt
 Select for life ſhall in the Ark be lodg'd,
 And ſhelter'd round, but all the Cataracts
 Of Heav'n ſet open on the Earth ſhall powre
 Rain day and night, all Fountains of the Deep
 Broke up, ſhall heave the Ocean to uſurp
 Beyond all bounds, till inundation riſe
 Above the higheſt Hills: then ſhall this Mount
 Of Paradife by might of waves be mov'd
 Out of his place, puſht by the horned flood,
 With all his verdure ſpoild, and trees adrift
 Down the great River to the opening Gulf,
 And there take root and Iſland ſalt and bare,
 The haunt of Seales and Orcs, and Sea-mews clang;
 To teach thee that God attributes to place
 No ſanctity, if none be thither brought
 By men who there frequent, or therein dwell.
 And now what further ſhall enſue, behold.

He lookt, and ſaw the Ark hull on the flood,
 Which now abated, for the Clouds were fled,
 Drivn by a keen North-winde, that blowing dry
 Wrinkl'd the face of Deluge, as decay'd;
 And the clear Sun on his wide watry Glaſs
 Gaz'd hot, and of the freſh wave largely drew,
 As after thirſt, which made thir flowing ſhrink
 From ſtanding lake to tripping ebbe, that ſtole
 With ſoft ſoot towards the deep, who now had ſtopt
 His Sluces, as the Heav'n his windows ſhut.
 The Ark no more now flotes, but ſeems on ground
 Faſt on the top of ſome high Mountain fixt.
 And now the top of Hills as Rocks appear;
 With clamor thence the rapid Currents drive
 Towards the retreating Sea thir furious ryde,

Forth

BOOK XI. *Paradise Lost.* 309

Forthwith from out the Ark a Raven flies,
 And after him, the surer messenger,
 A Dove sent forth once and agen to spie
 Green Tree or ground whereon his foot may light;
 The second time returning, in his Bill
 An Olive leafe he brings, pacific signe:
 Anon drie ground appeers, and from his Ark
 The ancient Sire descends with all his Train;
 Then with uplifted hands, and eyes devout,
 Grateful to Heav'n, over his head beholds
 A dewy Cloud, and in the Cloud a Bow
 Conspicuous with three list'd colours gay,
 Betok'ning peace from God, and Cov'nant new.
 Whereat the heart of *Adam* erst so sad
 Greatly rejoyc'd, and thus his joy broke forth.

O thou who future things canst represent
 As present, Heav'nly Instructor, I revive
 At this last sight, assur'd that Man shall live
 With all the Creatures, and thir seed preserve.
 Farr less I now lament for one whole world
 Of wicked Sons destroyd, then I rejoyce
 For one Man found so perfet and so just,
 That God voutsafes to raise another World
 For him, and all his anger to forger.
 But say what mean those colour'd streaks in Heaven,
 Distended as the Brow of God appeas'd,
 Or serve they as a flourie verge to binde
 The fluid Skirts of that same watric Cloud,
 Least it againe dissolve and showr the Earth?

To whom th' Archangel. Dextrously thou aim'st;
 So willingly doth God remit his Ire,
 Though late repenting him of Man deprav'd,
 Griev'd at his heart, when looking down he saw
 The whole Earth fill'd with violence, and all flesh

310 **Paradise Lost. Book XI.**

Corrupting each thir way; yet those remov'd,
Such grace shall one just Man find in his sight,
That he relents, not to blot out Mankind,
And makes a Covenant never to destroy
The Earth again by flood, nor let the Sea
Surpass his bounds, nor Rain to drown the World
With Man therein or Beast; but when he brings
Over the Earth a Cloud, will therein set
His triple-colour'd Bow, whereon to look
And call to mind his Cov'nant Day and Night,
Seed time and Harvest, heat and hoary Frost
Shall hold thir course, till fire purge all things new,
Both Heav'n and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell,

The End of the Eleventh Book.

Paradise

Paradise Lost.

BOOK XII.

THE ARGUMENT.

The Angel Michael continues from the Flood to relate what shall succeed; then, in the mention of Abraham, comes by degrees to explain, who that Seed of the Woman shall be, which was promised Adam and Eve in the Fall; his Incarnation, Death, Resurrection, and Ascension; the state of the Church till his Second Coming. Adam greatly satisfied and recomforted by these Relations and Promises descends the Hill with Michael; wakens Eve, who all this while had slept, but with gentle Dreams compos'd to quietness of mind and submission. Michael in either hand leads them out of Paradise, the fiery Sword waving behind them, and the Cherubim taking thir Stations to guard the Place.

AS one who in his journey bates at Noone,
Though bent on speed, so heere the Arch-
(angel paus'd

Betwixt the world destroy'd and world re-
If *Adam* aught perhaps might interpose; (stor'd,
Then with transition sweet new Speech resumes.

Thus thou hast seen one World begin and end;
And Man as from a second stock proceed.
Much thou hast yet to see, but I perceive
Thy mortal sight to faile; objects divine
Must needs impaire and wearie human sense:
Henceforth what is to com I will relate,
Thou therefore give due audience, and attend.
This second sours of Men; while yet but few;
And while the dread of judgment past remains
Fresh in thir mindes, fearing the Deitie,
With some regard to what is just and right
Shall lead thir lives, and multiplie apace,
Labouring the soile, and reaping plenteous crop,
Corn wine and oyle; and from the herd or flock,
Of sacrificing Bullock, Lamb, or Kid,
With large Wine-offerings pour'd, and sacred Feast,
Shall spend thir dayes in joy unblam'd. and dwell
Long time in peace by Families and Tribes
Under paternal rule; till one shall rise
Of proud ambitious heart, who not content
With fair equalitie, fraternal state,
Will arrogate Dominion undeserv'd
Over his brethren, and quite dispossess
Concord and law of Nature from the Earth,
Hunting (and Men, not Beasts shall be his game)
With Warr and hostile snare such as refuse

Sub.

I. **Book XII. Paradise Lost. 313**

Subjection to his Empire tyrannous :
A mightie Hunter thence he shall be styl'd
Before the Lord, as in despite of Heav'n,
Or from Heav'n claiming second Sovrantie;
And from Rebellion shall derive his name,
Though of Rebellion others he accuse.
Hee with a crew, whom like Ambition joyns
With him or under him to tyrannize,
Marching from *Eden* towards the West, shall finde
The Plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge
Boiles out from under ground; the mouth of Hell;
Of Brick, and of that stuff they cast to build
A Citie and Towre, whose top may reach to Heav'n;
And get themselves a name, least far dispers'd
In foraign Lands thir memorie be lost
Regardless whether good or evil fame.
But God who oft descends to visit men
Unseen, and through thir habitations walks
To mark thir doings, them beholding soon,
Comes down to see thir Citie, ere the Tower
Obstruct Heav'n Towers, and in derision sets
Upon thir Tongues a various Spirit to rase
Quite out thir Native Language, and instead
To sow a jangling noise of words unknown:
Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud
Among the Builders; each to other calls
Not understood, till hoarse, and all in rage,
As mockt they storm; great laughter was in Heav'n
And looking down, to see the hubbub strange
And hear the din; thus was the building left
Ridiculous, and the work Confusion nam'd.
Whereto thus *Adam* fatherly displeas'd,
O execrable Son so to aspire

Above

314 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK XII.

Above his Brethren, to himself assuming
 Authoritie usurpt, from God not giv'n;
 He gave us onely over Beast, Fish, Fowl,
 Dominion absolute; that right we hold
 By his donation; but Man over men
 He made not Lord; such title to himself
 Reserving, human left from human free.
 But this Usurper his encroachment proud
 Stayes not on Man; to God his Tower intends
 Siege and defiance: wretched man! what food
 Will he convey up thither to sustain
 Himself and his rash Armie, where thin Aire
 Above the Clouds will pine his entrails gross,
 And famish him of Breath, if not of Bread?

To whom thus *Michael*. Justly thou abhorrest
 That Son, who on the quiet state of men
 Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue
 Rational Libertie; yet know withall,
 Since thy original lapse, true Libertie
 Is lost, which alwayes with right Reason dwells
 Twinn'd, and from her hath no dividual being;
 Reason in man obscur'd, or not obeyd,
 Immediately inordinate desires
 And upstart Passions catch the Government
 From Reason, and to servitude reduce
 Man till then free. Therefore since hee permits
 Within himself unworthie Powers to reign
 Over free Reason, God in Judgment just
 Subjects him from without to violent Lords;
 Who oft as undeservedly enthrall
 His outward freedom: Tyrannie must be,
 Though to the Tyrant thereby no excuse.
 Yet sometimes Nations will decline so low

From

BOOK XII. *Paradise Lost.* 315

From vertue, which is reason, that no wrong,
 But Justice, and some fatal curse annext
 Deprives them of thir outward libertie,
 Thir inward lost: Witnelsth' irreverent Son
 Of him who built the Ark, who for the shame
 Done to his Father, heard this heaveie curse,
Servant of Servants, on his vitious Race.
 Thus will this latter, as the former World,
 Still tend from bad to worse, till God at last
 Wearied with their iniquities, withdraw
 His presence from among them, and avert
 His holy Eyes; resolving from thenceforth
 To leave them to thir own polluted wayes;
 And one peculiar Nation to select
 From all the rest, of whom to be invok'd,
 A Nation from one faithful man to spring:
 Him on this side *Euphrates* yet residing,
 Bred up in Idol-worship; O that men
 (Canst thou believe?) should be so stupid grown,
 While yet the Patriark liv'd, who scap'd the Flood,
 As to forsake the living God, and fall
 To worship thir own work in Wood and Stone
 For Gods! yet him God the most High voutsafes
 To call by Vision from his Fathers house,
 His kindred and false Gods, into a Land
 Which he will shew him, and from him will raise
 A mightie Nation, and upon him shewre
 His benediction so, that in his Seed
 All Nations shall be blest; he straight obeys,
 Not knowing to what Land, yet firm believes:
 I see him, but thou canst not, with what Faith
 He leaves his Gods, his Friends, and native Soile
 Of *Chaldea*, passing now the Ford

To

316 *Paradise Lost.* Book XII.

To *Haran*, after him a cumbrous Train
 Of Herds and Flocks, and numerous servitude;
 Not wandering poor, but trusting all his wealth
 With God, who call'd him, in a land unknown.
Canaan he now attains, I see his Tents
 Pitcht about *Sechem*, and the neighbouring Plaine
 Of *Moreh*, there by promise he receaves
 Gift to his Progenie of all that Land;
 From *Hamath* Northward to the Desert South
 (Things by thir names I call, though yet unnam'd)
 From *Herman* East to the great Western Sea,
 Mount *Herman*, yonder Sea, each place behold
 In prospect, as I point them; on the shoare
 Mount *Carmel*; here the double-founted stream
Jordan, true limit Eastward; but his Sons
 Shall dwell to *Senir*, that long ridge of Hills.
 This ponder, that all Nations of the Earth
 Shall in his Seed be blessed; by that Seed
 Is meant thy great deliverer, who shall bruise
 The Serpents head; whereof to thee anon
 Plainlier shall be reveald. This Patriarch blest,
 Whom faithful *Abraham* due time shall call,
 A Son, and of his Son a Grand-childe leaves,
 Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown;
 The Grandchilde with twelve Sons increast, departs
 From *Canaan*, to a Land hereafter call'd
Egypt, divided by the River *Nile*;
 See where it flows, disgorging at seven mouthes
 Into the Sea: to sojourn in that Land
 He comes invited by a yonger Son
 In time of dearth, a Son whose worthy deeds
 Raife him to be the second in that Realme
 Of *Pharao*: there he dies, and leaves his Race

Grow-

Book XII. *Paradise Lost.* 317

Growing into a Nation, and now grown
 Suspected to a sequent King, who seeks
 To stop thir overgrowth, as inmate guests
 Too numerous; whence of guests he makes them
 Inhospitably; and kills thir infant Males: (slaves
 Till by two brethren (those two brethren call
Moses and Aaron) sent from God to claime
 His people from enthalment, they return
 With glory and spoile back to thir promis'd Land.
 But first the lawless Tyrant, who denies
 To know thir God, or message to regard,
 Must be compell'd by Signes and Judgements dire;
 To blood unshed the Rivers must be turn'd,
 Frogs, Lice and Flies must all his Palace fill
 With loath'd intrusion, and fill all the land;
 His Cattle must of Rot and Murren die,
 Botches and blaines must all his flesh imbols,
 And all his people; Thunder mixt with Haile,
 Haile mixt with fire must rend th' *Egyptian Sky*
 And wheel on th' Earth, devouring where it rouls;
 What it devours not Herb, or Fruit, or Graine,
 A darksom Cloud of Locusts swarming down
 Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green:
 Darkness must overshadow all his bounds,
 Palpable darkness, and blot out three dayes;
 Last with one midnight stroke all the first-born
 Of *Egypt* must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds
 The River-dragon tam'd at length submits
 To let his sojourners depart, and oft
 Humbles his stubborn heart, but still as Ice
 More hard'nd after thaw, till in his rage
 Pursuing whom he late dismiss'd, the Sea
 Swallows him with his Host, but them lets pass

As

318 Paradise Lost. BOOK XII.

As on dry land between two chrestal walls,
 Awd by the rod of *Moses* so to stand
 Divided, till his rescu'd gain thir shoar;
 Such wondrous power God to his Saint will lend,
 Though present in his Angel, who shall goe
 Before them in a Cloud, and Pillar of Fire,
 By day a Cloud, by night a Pillar of Fire,
 To guide them in thir journey, and remove
 Behinde them, while th' obdurate King pursues:
 All night he will pursue, but his approach
 Darkness defends between till morning Watch;
 Then through the Fiery Pillar and the Cloud
 God looking forth will trouble all his Host
 And craze thir Chariot wheels: when by command
Moses once more his potent Rod extends
 Over the Sea; the Sea his Rod obeys;
 On thir imbrell'd ranks the Waves return,
 And overwhelm thir VVarr: the Race elect
 Safe towards *Canaan* from the shoar advance
 Through the wilde Desert, not the readiest way,
 Least entring on the *Canaanite* allarm'd,
 VVarr terrifie them in expert, and feare
 Return them dark to *Egypt*, choosing rather
 Inglorious life with servitude, for life
 To noble and ignoble is more sweet
 Untrain'd in Armes, where rashness leads not on,
 This also shall they gain by thir delay
 In the wide Wilderness, there they shall found
 Thir government, and thir great Senate choose
 Through the twelve Tribes, to rule by Laws ordain'd:
 God from the Mount of *Sinai*, whose gray top
 Shall tremble, he descending, will himself
 In Thunder Lightning and loud Trumpets sound

Ordaine

Ordaine them Lawes ; part such as appertaine
 To civil Justice, part religious Rites
 Of sacrifice, informing them, by types
 And shadows, of that destined Seede to bruite
 The Serpent, by what means he shall achieve
 Mankinds deliverance. But the voice of God
 To mortal eare is dreadful ; they beseech
 That *Moses* might report to them his will,
 And terror cease ; he grants what they besought
 Instructed that to God is no access
 Without Mediator, whose high Office now
Moses in figure bears, to introduce
 One greater, of whose day he shall foretell,
 And all the prophets in this Age the times
 Of great *Messiah* shall sing. Thus Laws and Rites
 Establish't, such delight hath God in Men
 Obedient to his will, that he vouchsafes
 Among them to set up his Tabernacle,
 The holy One with mortal Men to dwell :
 By his prescript a Sanctuary is fram'd
 Of Cedar, overlaid with Gold, therein
 An Ark, and in the Ark his Testimony,
 The Records of his Cov'nant, over these
 A Mercie-seat of Gold between the wings
 Of two bright Cherubim, before him burn
 Seven Lamps as in a Zodiac representing
 The Heav'nly fires ; over the Tent a Cloud
 Shall rest by Day, a fiery gleame by Night,
 Save when they journie, and at length they come
 Conducted by his Angel to the Land
 Promis'd to *Abraham* and his Seed : the rest
 Were long to tell, how many Battels fought,
 How many Kings destroyd, and Kingdoms won,

Or

310 *Paradise Lost*, BOOK XII.

Or how the Sun shall in mid Heav'n stand still
 A day entire, and Nights due course adjourne,
 Mans voice commanding, Sun in *Gibeon* stand,
 And thou Moon in the vale of *Aialon*,
 Till *Israel* overcome; so call the third
 From *Abraham*, Son of *Isaac*, and from him
 His whole descent, who thus shall *Canaan* win.
 Here *Adam* interpos'd, O sent from Heav'n,
 Enlightner of my darkness, gracious things
 Thou hast reveal'd, those chiefly which concerne
 Just *Abraham* and his Seed: now first I finde
 Mine eyes true op'ning, and my heart much eas'd,
 Erewhile perplext with thoughts what would become
 Of mee and all Mankind; but now I see
 His day, in whom all Nations shall be blest,
 Favour unmerited by me, who sought
 Forbidd'n knowledge by forbidd'n means.
 This yet I apprehend not, why to those
 Among whom God will deigne to dwell on Earth
 So many and so various Laws are giv'n;
 So many Laws argue so many sins
 Among them; how can God with such reside?

To whom thus *Michael*. Doubt not but that sin
 Will reign among them, as of thee begot;
 And therefore was Law given them to evince
 Thir natural pravitie, by stirring up
 Sin against Law to fight: that when they see
 Law can discover sin, but not remove,
 Save by those shadowie expiations weak,
 The blood of Bulls and Goats, they may conclude
 Some blood more precious must be paid for Man,
 Just for unjust, that in such righteousness
 To them by Faith imputed, they may finde

Just

BOOK XII. *Paradise Lost.* 321

Justification towards God, and peace
Of Conscience, which the Law by Ceremonies
Cannot appease, nor Man the moral part
Perform, and not performing cannot live.
So law appears imperfct, and but giv'n
With purpose to resign them in full time
Up to a better Cov'nant, disciplin'd
From shadowy Types to Truth, from Flesh to Spirit;
From imposition of strict Laws, to free
Acceptance of large Grace, from servil fear
To filial, works of Law to works of Faith.
And therefore shall not *Moses*, though of God
Highly belov'd, being but the Minister
Of Law, his people into *Canaan* lead;
But *Joshua* whom the Gentiles *Jesus* call,
His Name and Office bearing, who shall quell
The adversarie Serpent; and bring back
Through the worlds wilderness long wanderd man
Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.
Meanwhile they in thir earthly *Canaan* plac't
Long time shall dwell and prosper; but when fins
National interrupt thir public peace,
Provoking God to raise them enemies:
From whom as oft he saves them penitent
By Judges first, then under Kings; of whom
The second, both for pietie renown'd
And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive
Irrevocable, that his Regal Throne
For ever shall endure; the like shall sing
All prophetic; That of the Royal Stock
Of *David* (so I name this King) shall rise
A Son, the Womans Seed to thee foretold,
Foretold to *Abraham*, as in whom shall trust

All Nations, and to Kings foretold, of Kings
 The last, for of his Reign shall be no end.
 But first a long succession must ensue,
 And his next Son for Wealth and Wisdom fam'd,
 The clouded Ark of God till then in Tents
 Wandring, shall in a glorious Temple enshrine.
 Such follow him, as shall be registerd
 Part good, part bad, of bad the longer scrowle,
 Whose foule Idolatries, and other faults
 Heapt to the popular summe, will so incense
 God, as to leave them, and expose thir Land,
 Thir City, his Temple, and his holy Ark
 With all his sacred things, a scorn and prey.
 To that proud City, whose high Walls thou saw'st
 Left in confusion, *Babylon* thence call'd.
 There in captivity he lets them dwell
 The space of seventie years, then brings them back,
 Remembring mercie, and his Covenant sworn
 To *David*, stablish'd as the dayes of Heav'n,
 Return'd from *Babylon* by leave of Kings
 Thir Lords, whom God dispos'd, the house of God
 They first re-edifie, and for a while
 In mean estate live moderate, till grown
 In wealth and multitude, factious they grow;
 But first among the Priests dissension springs,
 Men who attend the Altar, and should most
 Endeavour Peace: thir strife pollution brings
 Upon the Temple it self: at last they seise
 The Scepter, and regard not *David's* Sons,
 Then loose it to a stranger, that the true
 Anointed King *Messiah* might be born
 Barr'd of his right; yet at his Birth a Starr
 Unseen before in Heav'n proclaims him com,

And

And guides the Eastern Sages, who enquire
His place, to offer Incense, Myrrh and Gold;
His place of Birth a solemn Angel tells
To simple Shepherds, keeping watch by night;
They gladly thither haste, and by a Quire
Of Squadron'd Angels hear his Carol sung.
A Virgin is his Mother, but his Sire
The Power of the Most High; he shall ascend
The Throne hereditary, and bound his Reign
With earths wide bounds, his glory with the heav'ns.

He ceas'd, discerning *Adam* with such joy
Surcharg'd, as had like grief bin dew'd in tears,
Without the vent of words, which these he breath'd.

O Prophet of glad tidings, finisher
Of utmost hope: now clear I understand
What oft my fittest thoughts have searcht in vain,
Why our great expectation should be call'd
The seed of Woman: Virgin Mother, Haile,
High in the love of Heav'n, yet from my Loyns
Thou shalt proceed, and from thy Womb the Son
Of God most High; So God with man unites.
Needs must the Serpent now his capital bruise
Expect with mortal pain: say where and when
Thir fight, what stroke shall bruise the Victors heel.

To whom thus *Michael*. Dream nor of thir fight,
As of a Duel, or the local wounds
Of head or heel: nor therefore joyns the Son
Manhood to God-head, with more strength to foil
Thy enemy; nor so is overcome
Satan whose fall from Heav'n, a deadlier bruise,
Disabl'd not to give thee thy deaths wound:
Which hee, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,
Not by destroying *Satan*, but his works

In thee and in thy Seed : nor can this be,
 But by fulfilling that which thou didst want,
 Obedience to the Law of God, impos'd
 On penaltie of death, and suffering death,
 The penaltie to thy transgression due,
 And due to theirs which out of thine will grow :
 So onely can high Justice rest appeas'd.
 The Law of God exact he shall fulfill
 Both by obedience and by love, though love
 Alone fulfill the Law ; thy punishment
 He shall endure by coming in the Flesh
 To a reproachful life and curst death,
 Proclaiming Life to all who shall believe
 In his redemption, and that his obedience
 Imputed becomes theirs by Faith, his merits
 To save them, not thir own, though legal works.
 For this he shall live hated, be blasphem'd,
 Seis'd on by force, judg'd, and to death condemn'd
 A shameful and accurst, nail'd to the Cross
 By his own Nation, slaine for bringing Life ;
 But to the Cross he nailes thy Enemies.
 The Law that is against thee, and the sins
 Of all mankind, with him there crucifi'd,
 Never to hurt them more who rightly trust
 In this his satisfaction ; so he dies,
 But soon revives, Death over him no power
 Shall long usurp ; ere the third dawning light
 Returne, the Starres of Morn shall see him rise
 Out of his grave, fresh as the dawning light,
 Thy ransom paid, which Man from death redeems,
 His Death for Man, as many as offerd Life
 Neglect not, and the benefit embrace
 By Faith not void of workes : this God-like act

Annals

Book XII. **Paradise Lost.** 325

Annuls thy doom, the death thou shouldst have dy'd,
 In sin for ever lost from life; this act
 Shall bruise the head of *Satan*, crush his strength
 Defeating Sin and Death, his two maine armes,
 And fix farr deeper in his head thir stings
 Then temporal death shall bruise the Victors heel,
 Or theirs whom he redeems, a death like sleep,
 A gentle waisting to immortal Life.
 Nor after resurrection shall he stay
 Longer on Earth then certaine times to appeer
 To his Disciples, Men who in his Life
 Still follow'd him, to them shall leave in charge
 To teach all Nations what of him they learn'd
 And his Salvation, them who shall beleve
 Baptizing in the profluent stream, the signe
 Of washing them from guilt of sin to Life
 Pure, and in mind prepar'd, if so befall,
 For death, like that which the Redeemer dy'd.
 All Nations they shall teach; for from that day
 Not onely to the Sons of *Abraham's* Loines
 Salvation shall be Preacht, but to the Sons
 Of *Abraham's* Faith wherever though the world;
 So in his seed all Nations shall be blest.
 Then to the Heav'n of Heav'ns he shall ascend
 With victory, triumphing through the aire
 Over his foes and thine; there shall surprise
 The Serpent, Prince of aire, and drag in Chaines
 Through all his Realm, and there confounded leave;
 Then enter into glory, and resume
 His Seat at Gods right hand, exalted high
 Above all names in Heav'n; and thence shall come,
 When this worlds dissolution shall be ripe,
 With glory and power to judge both quick and dead,

326 *Paradise Lost*, Book XII.

To judge th' unfaithful dead, but to reward
His faithful, and receive them into bliss;
Whether in Heav'n or Earth, for then the Earth
Shall all be Paradise, far happier place
Then this of *Eden*, and farr happier daies.

So spake th' Archangel *Michael*, then paus'd,
As at the Worlds great period; and our Sire
Replete with joy and wonder thus repli'd.

O goodness infinite, goodness immense!
That all this good of evil shall produce,
And evil turn to good; more wonderful
Then that which by creation first brought forth
Light out of darkness! full of doubt I stand.

Whether I should repent me now of sin
By mee done and occasion'd, or rejoyce
Much more, that much more good thereof shall spring,
To God more glory, more good will to Men
From God, and over wrauth grace shall abound.

But say, if our deliverer up to Heav'n
Must reascend, what will betide the few
His faithful, left among th' unfaithful herd,
The enemies of truth; who then shall guide
His people, who defend? will they not deal
Worse with his followers then with him they dealt?

Be sure they will, said th' Angel; but from Heav'n
Hec to his own a Comforter will send,
The promise of the Father, who shall dwell
His Spirit within them, and the Law of Faith
Working through love, upon thir hearts shall write,
To guide them in all truth, and also arme
With spiritual Armour, able to resist
Satan's assaults, and quench his fierie darts,
What man can do against them, not afraid,

Though

BOOK XII. *Paradise Lost.* 327

Though to the death, against such cruelties
With inward consolations recompenc't,
And oft supported so as shall amaze
Thir proudest persecuters : for the Spirit
Powrd first on his Apostles, whom he sends
To evangelize the Nations, then on all
Baptiz'd, shall them with wondrous gifts endue
To speak all Tongues, and do all Miracles,
As did thir Lord before them. Thus they win
Great numbers of each Nation to receave
With joy the tidings brought from Heav'n : at length
Thir Ministry perform'd, and race well run,
Thir doctrine and thir story written lest,
They die ; but in thir room, as they forewarn,
Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous Wolves,
VWho all the sacred mysteries of Heav'n
To thir own vile advantages shall turn
Of lucre and ambition, and the truth
VWith superstitions and traditions taint,
Left onely in those written Records pure,
Though not but by the Spirit understood.
Then shall they seek to avail themselves of names,
Places and titles, and with these to joyn
Secular power, though feigning still to act
By spiritual, to themselves appropriating
The Spirit of God, promis'd alike and giv'n
To all Believers ; and from that pretense,
Spiritual Laws by carnal power shall force
On every conscience ; Laws which none shall finde
Left them inrould, or what the Spirit within
Shall on the heart engrave. VWhat will they then
But force the Spirit of Grace it self, and binde
His consort Liberty ; what, but unbuild

328 **Paradise Lost. Book XII.**

His living Temples, built by Faith to stand,
 Their own Faith not anothers : for on Earth
 VWho against Faith and Conscience can be heard
 Infalible ? yet many will presume :
 VVhence heavy persecution shall arise
 On all who in the worship persevere
 Of Spirit and Truth ; the rest, far greater part,
 VVell deem in outward Rites and specious forms
 Religion satisfi'd ; Truth shall retire
 Bestuck with slanderous darts, and works of Faith
 Rarely be found : so shall the VVorld go on,
 To good malignant, to bad men benigne,
 Under her own waight groaning till the day
 Appear of respiration to the just,
 And vengeance to the wicked, at return
 Of him so lately promis'd to thy aid
 The VVomans Seed, obscurely then foretold,
 Now amplier known thy Saviour and thy Lord,
 Last in the Clouds from Heav'n to be reveal'd
 In glory of the Father, to dissolve
Satan with his perverted VVorld, then raise
 From the conflagrant mass, purg'd and refin'd,
 New Heavens, new Earth, Ages of endless date
 Founded in righteousness and peace and love
 To bring forth fruits Joy and eternal Bliss.

He ended ; and thus *Adam* last reply'd.
 How soon hath thy prediction, Seer blest,
 Measur'd this transient VVorld, the Race of time,
 Till time stand fixt : beyond is all abyss,
 Eternity, whose end no eye can reach.
 Greatly instructed I shall hence depart,
 Greatly in peace of thought, and have my fill
 Of knowledge what this Vessel can contain ;

Beyond

Book XII. *Paradise Lost.* 329

Beyond which was my folly to aspire.
Henceforth I learne, that to obey is best,
And love with fear the onely God; to walk
As in his presence, ever to observe
His providence, and on him sole depend,
Mercifull over all his works, with good
Still overcoming evil, and by small
Accomplishing great things, by things deemd weak
Subverting worldly strong, and worldly wise
By simply meek; that suffering for Truths sake
Is fortitude to highest victorie,
And to the faithful Death the Gate of Life;
Taught this by his example whom I now
Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blest.

To whom thus also th' Angel last repli'd:
This having learnt, thou hast attaind the summe
Of wisdom; hope no higher, though all the Starrs
Thou knewst by name, and all th' ethereal Powers,
All secrets of the deep, all Natures works,
Or works of God in Heav'n, Aire, Earth, or Sea,
And all the riches of this World enjoydst,
And all the rule, one Empire; onely add
Deeds to thy knowledge answerable, add Faith,
Add vertue, Patience, Temperance, add Love,
By name to come call'd Charitie, the soul
Of all the rest: then wilt thou not be loath
To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess
A paradise within thee, happier farr.
Let us descend now therefore from this top
Of Speculation; for the hour precise
Exacts our parting hence; and see the Guards,
By mee encamp't on yonder Hill, expect
Thit motion, at whose Front a flaming Sword,

In

330 *Paradise Lost.* BOOK XII.

In signal of remove, waves fiercely round;
 We may no longer stay: go, waken *Eve*;
 Her also I with gentle Dreams have calm'd
 Portending good, and all her spirits compos'd
 To meek submission: thou at season fit
 Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard
 Chiefly what may concern her Faith to know,
 The great deliverance by her Seed to come
 (For by the Womans Seed) on all Mankind.
 That ye may live, which will be many dayes,
 Both in one Faith unanimous though sad,
 With cause for evils past, yet much more cheer'd
 With meditation on the happie end.

He ended, and they both descend the Hill;
 Descended, *Adam* to the Bowre where *Eve*
 Lay sleeping ran before, but found her wak't;
 And thus with words not sad she him receav'd.

Whence thou returnst, and whither wentst, I know;
 For God is also in sleep, and Dreams advise,
 Which he hath sent propitious, some great good
 Prefaging, since with sorrow and hearts distress
 Wearied I fell asleep: but now lead on;
 In mee is no delay; with thee to goe,
 Is to stay here; without thee here to stay,
 Is to go hence unwilling; thou to mee
 Art all things under Heav'n, all places thou,
 Who for my wilful crime art banisht hence.
 This further consolation yet secure
 I carry hence; though all by mee is lost,
 Such favour I unworthie am voutsaft,
 By mee the Promis'd Seed shall all restore.

So spake our Mother *Eve*, and *Adam* heard
 Well pleas'd, but answerd not; for now too nigh

Th' Arch-

BOOK XII. *Paradise Lost.* 331

Th' Archangel stood, and from the other Hill
 To thir fixt Station, all in bright array
 The Cherubim descended; on the ground
 Gliding meteorous, as Ev'ning Mist
 Ris'n from a River o're the marish glides,
 And gathers ground fast at the Labourers heel
 Homeward returning. High in Front advanc't,
 The brandisht Sword of God before them blaz'd
 Fierce as a Comet; which with torrid heat,
 And vapour as the *Libyan* Air adust,
 Began to parch that temperate Clime; whereat
 In either hand the hastning Angel caught
 Our lingring Parents, and to th' Eastern Gate
 Led them direct, and down the Cliff as fast
 To the subjected Plain; then disappear'd.
 They looking back, all th' Eastern side beheld
 Of *Paradise*, so late thir happy seat,
 VVav'd over by that flaming Brand, the Gate
 VVith dreadful Faces throng'd and fiery Arms:
 Some natural tears they dropt, but wip'd them soon;
 The VVorld was all before them, where to choose
 Thir place of rest, and Providence thir guide:
 They hand in hand with wandring steps and slow,
 Through *Eden* took thir solitary way.

THE END.